





# EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 16

*Yan Bi Xiao Sheng*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

# Synopsis

---

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber; The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation; The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1501: Breaking The Formation

---

The stalwart figure never answered Li Qiye, it only firmly locked onto him with its eyes.

Li Qiye was still as nonchalant as ever: “I have to admit that your abyss has figured out many things and has a decent understanding of Godhalt. Unfortunately, you have met me. This is the same as courting death.”

“Li Qiye, stop running your mouth. Do you dare to come out and fight?” The Prince of Darkness answered instead of the figure.

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: “I have nothing to be afraid of. However, killing all of you like that is too much of a waste. I still have uses for you.”

“Li Qiye, show some courage. If you win this time, I will leave forever.” Zhentian chimed in as well.

Li Qiye casually retorted: “A mere loser is not qualified to speak to me like that.”

Such words left Zhentian quivering with rage. There was nothing he could do since he wasn't a match for Li Qiye on the battlefield or with rhetoric.

“Junior, come out and obediently surrender and we'll spare your life.” The Conch Overlord finally joined in.

“All of you are going to die, there's no need to boast so shamelessly. I pity you all, you won't even know how you're about to die.” Li Qiye smiled in response to the provocation.

The vice ancestor coldly challenged him: “You're the one boasting. I want to see what you can do to break our supreme formation.”

In his eyes, this formation was his Ancestral Terra's masterpiece with the combined effort of two sea gods. Because of this, he had

the utmost confidence in this formation and that Li Qiye couldn't ever break it.

“Break this formation, right?” Li Qiye was quite carefree: “Not the least bit challenging, it will be as simple as a meal.”

“Arrogant brat!” The vice ancestor was livid to hear such an outrageous answer: “Okay, come out this instant! I want to see what heaven-defying means you will employ to break my formation!”

Li Qiye chuckled: “Open your eyes wide and watch how I shall break this trivial formation and torture all of you!”

The vice ancestor felt like puking blood after hearing Li Qiye refer to their masterpiece as a trivial formation.

All the spectators in the distance watched with bated breaths. They were ready to see how Li Qiye would utilize all of his skills to break this supreme formation. They knew that he was a man of his word. If he said that he could break it, then he was definitely capable of doing so.

“Buzz!” In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye suddenly disappeared inside the grand momentum. The figure swept around the world but still couldn't find him.

This was difficult to believe for Zhentian's group because they had their eyes fixated on him earlier. There was no way for him to disappear right before their eyes.

“Boom!” As the figure continued its search, it suddenly exploded. The formation broke down as the refined jades were scattered. All laws were shattered. Under such a powerful blast, Zhentian's group was completely blown away.

“Bang!” They couldn't even react in time before a powerful force instantly suppressed them. It was as if a giant in the sky had trampled on all of them, completely immobilizing everything.

“What's going on?” No one could tell what was going on. Such a

sudden reversal left them astounded. From start to finish, they had no clue as to how the great formation was broken.

In fact, even Zhentian's group didn't know how Li Qiye destroyed it so quickly.

Li Qiye reappeared at this time. He was still standing within the grand momentum with laws appearing all over his body. Countless laws emerged everywhere on the momentum as well. At this moment, the momentum looked like the laws of the world or the laws of the ocean. It was as if every single law originated from this source. Li Qiye seemed to be fusing with these laws, as if he was part of the center.

"Live by the sword, die by the sword." Li Qiye was one with the momentum: "You borrowed some power from the momentum, but you don't know that when I am controlling the momentum right here, I can easily detonate the power in your formation. This is too easy, you brought a wolf into your own home."

"You!" Zhentian's group was both angry and afraid. The vice ancestor was especially furious. He didn't expect his sect's proudest masterpiece to be destroyed in such a simple manner.

"Open!" They roared, wanting to repel the power pressuring them. However, despite mustering every fiber of their being, they still couldn't escape from this power. The more they struggled, the stronger the pressure.

"Don't waste your energy. This is the suppression of the momentum, its full power, unlike the tiny portion that you borrowed earlier. Unless you are an emperor, don't even think about moving this power." Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh while looking at the group trying to overturn the suppression.

The spectators from afar were amazed and speechless. This grand momentum was powerful to an unimaginable level. How could the four and their legions be able to escape from its pressure?

“Li Qiye is too devilish.” Someone had to say: “Reversing the situation like it was nothing. He is truly bizarre.”

“The winner takes all, we have nothing else to say. Li Qiye, do as you please. I only blame myself for not being capable enough and dying here today!” In the end, Zhentian gave up after failing to lift the suppression. He was a true man and remained proud before imminent death.

After hearing this, everyone was slightly startled. The fate of the four experts and their legions were at Li Qiye’s whim. A single thought of his could decide their death.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Rest assured, all of you will die. However, the process will be very painful, and you will wish for death. Don’t blame me for being ruthless, blame yourselves for letting go of the chance to run.”

With that, Li Qiye slightly moved and the laws of the momentum followed him. A terrifying event ensued.

“Zzz—” A strange sound came about. Roots suddenly appeared among the thousands of experts. After growing out of their bodies, they immediately took root within the earth.

“No!” The experts among the legions turned pale from fear. They wanted to struggle but couldn’t move at all.

“Li Qiye, what demonic art is this!” Even the four top experts were frightened.

“This is no demonic art.” Li Qiye chuckled: “This is the most esoteric law of the grand dao. You should know that after borrowing the momentum’s power, everyone’s vitality had fused. Thus, on top of the refined jades’ power, the momentum’s power had fused with your blood so its laws are inside your body! At this moment, these laws are relying on your flesh and blood to grow, that’s all.”

“What, what are you doing!” Even the Prince of Darkness was

aghast for what was to come.

“Not much.” Li Qiye replied: “Didn’t you want to borrow the grand momentum’s power? You have to repay after borrowing, right? It is time for the momentum to borrow your vitality to nourish this so-called medicine of immortality so that it can mature a little earlier.”

Everyone without exception was astounded after hearing this. It wasn’t only borrowing vitality, Li Qiye might be wanting to squeeze them dry to nourish the nine leaves!

# Chapter 1502: Blood Drawing

---

The four experts and their tens of thousands of supporters had roots growing from their bodies that then connected to the ground.

“Zzz—” The roots sucked away their blood energy, longevity blood, life force, and grand dao; virtually all of their essences were being drained.

After taking away the group’s vitality, all of these essences were refined through the grand momentum before being passed to the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves.

“The medicine of immortality isn’t that old tree?” Many people were stunned to see the essences flow into the small leaves. From the very beginning, they thought that the tree was the real medicine. No one expected that this small grass with nine leaves was actually the real thing.

The truth was that none of them knew what it was since the news was purposely spread by Zhentian’s group.

“Li Qiye, are you not afraid of being punished by the heavens for your heinous deeds?” Even characters like the prince were frightened as their essences were being sucked dry. After all, few could face death without fear. Moreover, being squeezed dry like this was even more terrifying.

Li Qiye simply smiled in response: “Punishment from the heavens? Killing a few of you won’t do anything. I’ve already killed billions in the past! This is nothing in comparison. Plus, don’t try to be all moralistic before me. Your abyss has committed countless evil acts as well! Not to mention robbing and killing people in Godhalt, burying babies underground is already heinous enough since not all of them made it! I am simply devouring my enemies’ essences while you all are the ones burying your own children. Who is more disgusting here?”

The prince who was shouting earlier had no response.

“I have never feared the villainous heavens.” Li Qiye continued: “Plus, even if this is worthy of punishment, it wouldn’t be descending upon me. The thing taking away your essences is the immortal grass and the grand momentum. All I did was change the rule.”

No one dared to speak at this moment since the crowd was creeped out by this spectacle.

“The victors are kings while the losers are bandits, there is nothing else to say. But Li Qiye, you used trickery to defeat us, it’s not honorable at all. If you used your real strength to defeat us, we would have nothing to say. In this manner, the Ancestral Terra and the three great races in Heaven Spirit will avenge us!”

“Okay, don’t try to scare me.” Li Qiye was quite amused: “What is this about Heaven Spirit’s powers? Since when have I been afraid? If they want to come, then come! Bring one million and one million will be slaughtered, bring one billion and one billion will be slaughtered! It’s no big deal at all!”

The vice ancestor threatened him out of fear, but Li Qiye didn’t bite the bait.

Many cultivators got chills around their necks after hearing this. His words were like sharp sabers hanging by their necks. Anyone who dared to oppose him would be decapitated instantly.

Li Qiye went on: “And what is this about trickery? When Zhentian lost, all of you were still hiding and didn’t do anything, why? Wasn’t it just to lead me into your trap? Since you were the first ones to resort to scheming, I decided to play along. Plus, think about it, where else am I going to find four people as powerful as you to act as nourishment? Moreover, there are another ten thousand experts here. This is especially true for Zhentian and the prince; they have high cultivations and are also young... this majestic vitality and prosperous spirit that’s full of life — so

nutritious. They are much better compared to the old geezers like the vice ancestor and Conch Overlord. Thus, I was more than happy to jump into your trap. As the saying goes, how can you catch the cub without entering the tiger's lair?"

Having said that, he smiled and gently shook his head: "I'm not trying to belittle all of you, but this scheme or strategy is not worth mentioning. As long as I spend a little effort, all of you were doomed from the start."

The spectators glanced at each other. Not even in their wildest dreams did they expect for Li Qiye to scheme against the group. This was a real ploy compared to the trap laid by Zhentian.

Zhentian's group was currently silent. The prince and the others personally planned this for the Lunargrasp Fairy and the True Martial Goddess in order to capture them. They didn't expect that Li Qiye alone was enough to deal with them all.

"To be honest, using so many experts as nourishment is a bit cruel. However, you came on your own, so don't blame me for doing so."

"Brother Li, there is an adage — one should make friends instead of enemies." The Conch Overlord spoke with a smiling face: "You have bested us this time and we accept our defeat. What do you want? Just say the word, everything is negotiable."

The overlord has conceded even though everyone else was watching. In his mind, face was nothing compared to being alive. He naturally agreed to put down his pride in order to stay alive.

"Overlord, you still haven't changed at all. In your youth, you relied on your father's prestige to do as you please. After meeting Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, you crawled up into your hole like a turtle for countless years by living a borrowed life. But now, noticing that no one stronger than you came out, you crawled out to act all imperiously only to hit an iron wall. And now, you have to beg for your life once again. You have wasted your origin and

lost all of your father's face." Li Qiye smiled and scolded him without any reservation.

The overlord's expression changed color repeatedly from being livid, yet he couldn't act out since he was a fish on the chopping block.

"Brother Li, everyone makes mistakes at times." In the end, he took a deep breath and said: "Do you think that you make the right choice every time? Even if you kill us today, don't you think someone even stronger will try and avenge us? We didn't only make it this far by relying on the forces you see before you..."

The overlord had given up completely and started calling Li Qiye "brother."

Many people felt contempt towards his actions, but they did realize that they might not necessarily be able to face death so freely either. It was better to live a dog life than to die.

"I know." Li Qiye interrupted him: "Your Roaring Conch can also beseech another person, but I don't care. In my eyes, all opponents are the same, and I'm not in the mood to show mercy at this moment! It is too late to beg now. Just try your best and be food for the medicine."

The overlord was distraught. Even an ancestor like him felt fear at this moment; otherwise, he wouldn't be begging right now.

Contrary to the overlord, Zhentian had some backbone and shouted: "Li Qiye, give us a swift end if you are so great!"

"Very well, I shall lend you a hand." Li Qiye laughed.

"Buzz!" The moment he finished speaking, the laws inside the momentum turned even more dazzling as if they were coming to life.

"Ah!" The experts with roots growing out of them couldn't stop screaming from the pain.

The absorption speed was now countless times faster. In a short period of time, the group completely changed in appearance. Their hair turned gray and their skin became loose.

Even young experts like Zhentian and the Prince of Darkness aged right away.

# Chapter 1503: Seizing The Reincarnation

## Nine-Leaves

---

“Buzz!” The nine leaves growing on the old tree instantly lit up. The complete grass instantly took the life force from three thousand worlds. Even though it didn’t move at all, everyone could feel that every leaf seemed to be stretching.

After the leaves absorbed the essences, this sea of blood seemed to be soaring through the veins of the leaves!

“No!” Someone shouted in the face of death. No matter how strong one might be, they would show fear at this period and uncontrollably scream. A trembling weakness permeated through the victims.

After seeing this scene, many experts were creeped out. Zhentian’s group and their legions were instantly turned to decrepit men. After their essences were stolen, they didn’t look like the invincible men they once were.

Just imagine how unbeatable and dreadful Zhentian and the Prince of Darkness used to be; the vice ancestor was also quite mighty as well... Alas, before Li Qiye, they were mere fish on the chopping board.

Who would have thought that the once invincible group would have such a result today?

However, no one could say anything since they were aware of the merciless path towards the throne, either us or them. If Li Qiye were to lose today, he could have met an even worse fate.

No one would criticize this type of death from losing. The path towards the throne was paved with bones, after all.

“Buzz.” The nine leaves became endlessly bright with the veins showing up clearly.

Its reincarnation affinity was spinning with the light and turned into vortexes. They seemed to be containing the yin and yang as well as the karmic and samsara cycles...

It was as if something inside each of the vortexes was chasing after the ultimate profundity. The existences inside could reincarnate and live again!

“No...” A few experts screamed before their last second. They weren’t willing to die like this but there was nothing they could do.

“Zzz—” The nine leaves continued to suck what little left of their essences. In the blink of an eye, the ten thousand of experts in the four legions died one after another. They turned into dried corpses and have been robbed of all!

“Damn it all! Time didn’t wait for me...” In the end, Zhentian cried out as well before his head fell to the side. He joined the others as a corpse.

Before him, the prince and the others couldn’t stand it much longer and have died as well.

In a short time, no one had any comment. Zhentian was an incredible genius. Even though he has avoided a generation, he still couldn’t escape death. Only the person surviving till the end could become emperor since there was only one Heaven’s Will!

“Bang!” The leaves emitted a scorching wave. All the corpses here turned into powder and shattered completely.

“Screech!” The grass suddenly sang. There were cries of dragons and phoenixes in the air.

The iron roots of the nine leaves connected to the old tree suddenly shrank and began to withdraw from the ground.

“Buzz!” It actually started flying at an unbelievable speed in order to escape this place.

People's heart skipped a beat after seeing this. They all wanted for it to escape successfully so that there was still a chance in the future. Maybe the lucky one could obtain it later on.

However, if it failed to run away and was captured by Li Qiye, no one else should even think about interfering. Who would dare to compete against Li Qiye at this moment?

Alas, Li Qiye was prepared right when the grass tried to escape. Laws in the grand momentum turned into a prison and instantly suppressed the grass. With the momentum crushing down, it left behind an indelible mark on it.

It didn't have the power to run at all and obediently fell into Li Qiye's hand. He grabbed it with a faint smile on his face.

The crowd didn't expect for the grand momentum to have this effect as well. They knew that it was the grass' protector but now, it seemed that it also served as its prison to avoid an escape at the time of maturity.

Most people salivated while looking at Li Qiye's hand and became quite tempted. However, that was one thing. No one was actually tired of living enough to try anything.

Li Qiye slowly said with a smile: "If you don't need it, I'll be taking it now."

People glanced at each other in confusion. No one knew what he meant or who he was talking to.

Only Su Yonghuang was slightly startled. She didn't know whether the grass' master would appear or not. What kind of scene would it be?

Just imagine, a person capable of growing this grass and waited for so long. It must definitely be a terrifying existence.

However, the world was quiet and no one answered Li Qiye. No one came out either. It was as if he was talking to himself.

After seeing a lack of response, he chuckled and said: “Silence stands for agreement, I won’t be so reserved then.” With that, he stored the grass.

Everyone gulped after seeing this with an envious heart. There was nothing else anyone could do the moment he put the leaves away. This was now a foregone conclusion. No one else had any ideas about it.

“It seems like everyone is preparing for the last moment. The disaster isn’t far off now.” He patted his palms and said with a tinge of regrets.

No one understood this either about the last moment and the disaster.

Finally, he slowly walked out from the grand momentum.

Everyone looked at him carefully while quietly breathing. They all felt a sense of admiration not only because of his power but also due to his merciless methods towards his foes!

“Let’s go.” He smiled towards Yonghuang. She nodded in agreement.

But he suddenly turned around with a cold glare and said: “I don’t like others tailing me like a ghost. It is best you come out before I become angry.”

This astonished the crowd because no one noticed that someone was following him!

With a buzzing noise, someone appeared out of thin air and slowly landed on the ground.

“The younger generation will surpass us in time. Amazing, to still be detected by you.” The newcomer said.

This was a strange old man. Half of his body was in human form while the other half had branches and leaves. The tree-like half was very green as if each leaf was a new life, full of majestic

vitality.

He wore ordinary clothing and didn't particularly stand out beside his eyes. When he opened them, they looked like two terrible black holes. Even the myriad dao and the deities would be instantly annihilated if they were to fall into his gaze.

# Chapter 1504: Imperial Dualchild

---

The old man stood there staring at Li Qiye. His bright eyes made everyone feel a sense of dread.

“An Emperor Assailant!” The old monarch became stunned to see the pair of world-destroying eyes. After regaining his wits, fear overwhelmed him and he almost kneeled on the ground.

Everyone else in this place was frightened as well. This old man ahead was very ordinary in both appearance and aura compared to Zhentian’s group who had incredible visual phenomena accompanying them.

“A real one!” The wise characters from the previous generation were aghast and took several thumping steps back, not daring to look into his eyes.

The majority of cultivators here lowered their head, averting their gaze from his own. This gaze was too terrible and all-destroying. Anyone who looked at them for a long time would find their soul departing the body and die instantly.

Emperor Assailant, an existence that deters the very soul. Everyone became timid with a tingling sensation on their scalp.

“An Emperor Assailant has finally shown up.” Someone murmured while stealing glance at the old man.

This was a terrible existence worthy of admiration. Characters of this level wouldn’t easily come into being. The appearance of every single one was always a big deal.

There was no doubt that he was here for the medicine of immortality in Li Qiye’s possession.

In a short time, the crowd was excited again to see how Li Qiye would act towards this Emperor Assailant.

The old man’s fixated gaze on Li Qiye seemed to have taken

physical form. Anyone would feel trepidation being stared at by this powerful existence. Some would even directly fall to the ground.

However, Li Qiye was completely fine. He leisurely glanced at the old man and said: “And here I thought it was someone else. It’s you, old Imperial Dualchild.”

The old man was a bit surprised to be recognized: “I have lived in seclusion for a long time. Can’t believe someone actually remembers me.”

The old experts haven’t heard of this top character. Nevertheless, no one showed any sign of slight before him.

“Imperial Dualchild.” A big shot sealed for many eras gasped after hearing this: “Rumor has it that he is the son of an Immortal Emperor and a treemother! He, he is still in this world.”

The insightful crowd recalled an old legend in unison after hearing this. According to the stories, an emperor has gotten together with a treemother and they gave birth to a child.

Even though the two didn’t formally marry each other, this old man was indeed their son. Because of this, others called him Imperial Dualchild.

This fella was famous in that generation even throughout the entire nine worlds. However, after that generation, he also disappeared.

After so many years, people didn’t expect him to still be alive. Nevertheless, they weren’t surprised to see him in this place. A character like him must have lived for a long time and sealed for many eras. Despite being the child of two great existences, he still couldn’t bear the torture of time and needed the immortal medicine to prolong his life.

Dualchild stared at Li Qiye and slowly said: “Young friend, how about we make a deal?”

Li Qiye smiled back: “You want the item in my possession?” He naturally knew what Dualchild wanted.

“Yes.” Dualchild nodded: “You know your stuff so you can understand that the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves aren’t that useful for you since you are still young. If you trade it to me, just say whatever wishes you have.”

Everyone was slightly moved after hearing this. The words of an Emperor Assailant were too tempting. A successful trade with one would grant a lifetime of benefits.

“What can you give me?” Li Qiye chuckled: “I know you are the descendant of an Immortal Emperor and a treemother so you have many treasures. However, I’m not interested at all in imperial weapons or treefathers’ secret techniques. If I wanted these treasures, I could casually pick up a dozen easily.”

The listeners became speechless. He made it sound as if these priceless treasures weren’t different from cabbages at all.

“So, what will you give me for the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves?” He amusingly stared at Dualchild.

People here finally learned the name of the immortal medicine, Reincarnation Nine-Leaves.

Only someone as knowledgeable as Dualchild would know this type of grass.

Dualchild narrowed his eyes and said: “How about I become your dao protector? Give the grass to me and I’ll protect you until you become an Immortal Emperor.”

Many talents’ heart started thumping faster. To have an Emperor Assailant as a dao protector was an irresistible temptation for anyone who wanted to become emperor.

In a short time, all wanted to see how Li Qiye would respond.

He smiled and shook his head: “To tell the truth, no one will

become emperor in this generation but me. Having dao protectors or not will still yield the same result.”

Countless took a deep breath after hearing this. The final battle for the Heaven’s Will has yet to begin. Who else in this world would dare to claim such a thing? Nevertheless, Li Qiye defied logic.

Of course, after pondering a bit, people would find that these words were quite rational. He could even cultivate thirteen palaces, what else couldn’t he do?

“There are many uncertainties in this world.” Dualchild slowly said: “Don’t be so confident, many geniuses have died in history.”

“That’s others, I am Li Qiye. Nothing is impossible for me.” Li Qiye smiled freely in response.

He took breath away with this overbearing response. For many people, they wouldn’t have the courage to speak to an Emperor Assailant, let alone negotiating with one.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, remained calm and nonchalant. Just this type of decisiveness alone was worthy of admiration.

“Then what do you want before trading the nine leaves over to me, young friend?” Dualchild stared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye met his gaze and said: “I’m afraid the full grass is not on the menu but if you want one leaf, I can give it to you for the simple exchange for your labor.”

Everyone was shocked to hear this. An invincible existence like an Emperor Assailant was only worth one leaf?! This was too unbelievable. If this was the case, wouldn’t Li Qiye have enough to have nine Emperor Assailants under him?!

Dualchild’s eyes slightly shifted. After a long time, he said: “Young friend, you should know that this is impossible. Hand me the full thing and I’ll accept your condition.”

Li Qiye shook his head: “If you maintain that stance, we have nothing else to say.”

He naturally understood why Dualchild wanted all nine leaves. The guy wanted to gamble with all nine in order to live a new life again, an incredible profit!

“I’m afraid you don’t understand the whole picture, young friend.” Dualchild continued: “If I become your dao protector, everything will be different. You won’t just gain an enforcer paving your path.”

“I know.” Li Qiye smiled back: “You think your worth is far above that. As a child from an emperor and a treemother, you do indeed have other advantages unlike others. For example, your connections and resources. These things do add some considerable values.”

# Chapter 1505: A Shocking Battle

---

Some became more aware after being reminded by Li Qiye. This prince did offer many advantages compared to other Emperor Assailants.

After all, as long as he was still in this world, he would have connections, resources, and knowledge among other things...

“Young friend, you got it.” Dualchild didn’t humbly deny and continued: “When that day comes, you will have more than just those things.”

“No, I am someone who prefers tangible benefits more.” Li Qiye said: “One leaf for your labor. Think about it and accept if you wish.”

Li Qiye made it very clear with no room for negotiation.

Dualchild’s expression turned lukewarm. His condition was already excellent. Anyone else wouldn’t be able to say no yet Li Qiye refused him so directly.

Many became worried for Li Qiye. Refusing an Emperor Assailant required so much determination and strength. Nevertheless, he still did it without any hesitation as if he didn’t care for Dualchild at all. The only thing worthy of his attention was his own whim.

“Looks like you’re not willing.” Li Qiye chuckled: “I have given you the chance, unfortunately, you chose against it.”

Having said that, he turned and left.

“Young friend!” Dualchild called him back and took his time persuading: “Everything in moderation. You must be sensible and not seize every inch of benefits you can get. Sometimes, acquiescing is a blessing in disguise. Everyone should be flexible and choose the right battle.”

Dualchild’s answer suffocated many experts. It was very vague

but people could hear that this was a warning or even a threat towards Li Qiye.

If anyone were to be threatened by an Emperor Assailant, their food would become tasteless from feeling restless. Perhaps nightmare would greet them every night as well.

Li Qiye immediately turned around and smiled after hearing this: “Threatening me? No one has ever dared to threaten me in this world! If you are smart, tuck your tail between your legs now and I can pretend as if nothing has happened. Otherwise, so what if you are the child of an emperor and a treemother? In my eyes, not any random dog and cat can claim to be an Emperor Assailant. Don’t think just because you can handle three to five hundred moves against an emperor that you are qualified to call yourself Emperor Assailant and think that you can oppose one. I am not like your father who will go easy on you. Provoke me and even if you are the child of the high heaven, I will still make a chamber pot out of his head!”

The crowd turned silly after hearing this. Threatening an Emperor Assailant was too domineering. This proved that Li Qiye didn’t care for Dualchild at all.

Dualchild grimaced after hearing this and glared at Li Qiye with fury oozing out of his mind.

Not to mention his origin, his power was also unquestionable. In Heaven Spirit, few dared to oppose him. Even characters like Zhentian would assume the role of a junior when talking to him with respectful formalities.

But now, a human junior like this dared to threaten him with disdain? How could he not become angry?

After saying his part, Li Qiye was too lazy to look at the guy and left with Su Yonghuang.

In a short time, the crowd stood still since they were slightly

worried for him. Dualchild could go mad and kill Li Qiye. They didn't know whether Li Qiye could defend himself against Dualchild's wrath or not.

However, the furious Dualchild didn't take action as Li Qiye was leaving. He simply watched Li Qiye's back with a terrible glare.

Such a frightening pair of eyes made everyone shudder. Even though it was fixated on Li Qiye, everyone felt that they would have nightmares today due to this ominous foreboding.

In just one night, Heaven Spirit was taken by a storm by this news. Meng Zhentian, Prince of Darkness, Dragon Bamboo Vice Ancestor, and the Conch Overlord along with their legions were completely annihilated by Li Qiye.

It set off a tidal wave across the world. Many experts were stunned along with their sects. Everyone was in a furor instantly.

"What, Meng Zhentian is dead!?" A big shot from the charming spirit race couldn't believe this and thought that it was falsified.

After repeated confirmation, the big shot still couldn't calm down. Keep in mind that so many charming spirits held Zhentian in high esteem during the race for the Heaven's Will. He was the most hopeful to become emperor.

"Zhentian is dead now, what should we do. We, we have invested a lot of manpower and resources into him." Some sects that have allied with him became downtrodden. Their sect masters dropped back to their chair with an empty mind.

These alliances have cost them a great number of resources. With his death, all of their efforts have gone down the drain. All of their seeds were akin to bubbles dispersing in the ocean.

Some imperial lineages were out of words because they wanted to marry their princesses to Meng Zhentian and advertised the event publicly! His death was a heavy loss to these lineages. There was no taken back now.

“So heaven-defying, a complete reversal.” One ancestor was shocked upon hearing this news: “Only a human in Heaven Spirit. In terms of resources and connection, he is no match for Zhentian. I have to say that it is magical for him to make it this far. Looks like the throne is his for sure now.”

At the same time, the news of Li Qiye’s thirteen palaces acted as a heavy bomb exploding in this world. The mass simply couldn’t believe it.

“Thirteen palaces...” Even old undyings that have been sealed for a long time were stunned: “Is he a monster? How could someone have thirteen palaces in this world?”

In just one night, Heaven Spirit was lost in a torrent of bewilderment.

“Go, inquire whether Li Qiye has a dao companion or not. Our princess wants to marry him.” Some imperial lineages immediately sent out their best disciples for scouting.

“No disciple or member in the sect is allowed to oppose Li Qiye. If you meet him, it doesn’t matter what he wants, show your full support or report back to the sect. We will provide full assistance.” All the great powers reminded their disciples.

Li Qiye became a hot character overnight. So many discussions revolved about him and how to befriend him for he has reached the pinnacle of Heaven Spirit.

These sects even hoped to find those close to him in order to use their connection.

“That’s the next emperor.” Many experts and sects had this thought.

“Our Spring God Gate supports Young Noble Li. If you ever need anything, just say the words and we shall even jump into the boiling water.” A few sects couldn’t contact him so they sent out news about their support.

Everyone knew that there was still a chance to have a relationship with him before the ascension. It would be too late once he became emperor.

# Chapter 1506: The Difficult Past

---

While everyone was raving about current events, Li Qiye and Su Yonghuang returned to True Martial Island. His triumphant return was within Dantai Ruonan's expectation.

"It is one thing if you don't do anything, but once you do, it will be earth-shattering, young master." Ruonan smiled and said.

She wasn't surprised at all about the massacre since she was aware that characters like Zhentian were no big deal to her young master, not worth mentioning.

"Only child's play." Li Qiye smiled freely: "If Emperor Assailants don't join in, can't even warm up at all, let alone going all out."

People would be scared silly if they were to hear this conversation. Massacring Zhentian's level of character was only child's play? Then what would going all out look like?

"In terms of real assailants, Heaven Spirit actually has three or five. I'm afraid these people have more or less heard about your stories. If you are here, they wouldn't dare to show their face even if they were ten times more courageous. As for these other Emperor Assailants, they are in title only." Ruonan joked.

For the world, to be able to fight against an emperor for one to two hundred moves was an Emperor Assailant. This was already invincible enough. The other Godkings wouldn't be able to contend at this level.

However, for Li Qiye and Ruonan, they had a different definition of an Emperor Assailant, a much higher standard.

"The Roaring Conch can get someone." Li Qiye smiled casually: "But no big deal, the sooner they come, the faster we can deal with it. I actually want to slaughter them all so it won't be too bad." Having said that, he stared towards the Divine Tree Ridge in the distant.

He was very frivolous with his comment. Ruonan understood that he didn't really care about them.

"You have something else troubling you?" She gently asked.

As a long-time confidant, she understood him more than anyone else. Ordinary matters wouldn't trouble him like this.

"I had a few ace cards that I couldn't use so I'm a bit down." Li Qiye eventually laughed and said.

"You were waiting for even more shocking characters to come out?" She looked at the ridge in the distant and asked while standing side by side with him.

"The remaining ones are no big deal, can't reach the apex. I'll flatten them if they come. I was talking about the ridge but it looks like that won't happen. I entered the inner world and took a few things as well as the nine leaves but the place is still calm." He explained.

"Maybe it is in awe of your reputation." She said.

He chuckled and shook his head: "Perhaps, perhaps not. Even though I have played with the Bonesea and the ridge a couple of times already, it isn't that easy to force them into submission. I came this time with this goal in mind but they remained silent still."

"They are simply recharging and do not want to fight against you under these circumstances." Ruonan was aware of the undercurrent.

"Right, this makes it even more clear that the great disaster is approaching." He said slowly.

She pondered for a bit before replying: "Did you want to flip the ridge over? Or just a straight sweep to the golden palace itself?"

"No." He elaborated: "I just wanted to talk to the ridge, even more so than the Bonesea."

“That’s not your style though, young master.” She was surprised to hear this response.

He chuckled pleasantly: “Ruonan, you make it sound like I love war so much. I do like fighting and all but there are times when I can happily sit down and talk too. If certain things are negotiable, why not do it? Plus, there’s no harm even if it doesn’t work out.”

She sniggered after hearing this. After a while, she continued: “You aren’t someone who negotiates with others. Plus, you have fought before already so if you were actually determined, you would have plow your way to the palace.”

“I wouldn’t care of it was for personal reasons. Declaring war is no problem.” He gently sighed: “However, I really wanted to talk this time. I have a good understanding of the ridge but not as much as the Bonesea. When that day comes, a sea of blood will engulf Heaven Spirit. At that point, maybe charming spirits, treants, and sea demons will have to face genocide.”

“Are you worried about me?” Ruonan asked softly.

He smiled and patted her head: “I have never worried about you before. With your power, even if the disaster was present, you could still leave. However, I know that you wouldn’t, and especially not during the disaster.”

She didn’t answer because the young master was correct.

“The Ruonan I know have always faced the challenge boldly without trepidation.” He laughed sentimentally.

“I feel satisfied to be praised like this.” She let out a beautiful smile.

He smiled wryly and shook his head again: “I have left behind a few things, some preparations that can be useful for you in the future. It is too bad that I can’t personally help you pave the way and shoulder the sky.”

“No.” She grabbed his hand and stared at him solemnly: “You

have done more than enough for me. Though the world all think that I am very gifted, I wouldn't have the same achievements today without you. Plus, I don't blame you at all, this is my own choice. You have already paved the way for me to the point of removing all obstacles towards the throne. The reality is that I have disappointed you by choosing to stay."

With that, even a strong woman like her felt a strange melancholy.

A very long time ago after the end of Immortal Emperor Min Ren's generation, Ruonan had many choices because she has severed her bloodline. She could leave Heaven Spirit for good even.

If she chose to become emperor, she would have become one already. With that, she could follow her young master above the nine heavens to the world with emperors and gods.

Alas, she ultimately chose to stay in Heaven Spirit instead. This was the most hopeless choice, the path that her father didn't want to see.

She went on to say: "Young master, you don't owe me anything, it is the opposite. I know that you once hoped for me to become emperor and made sufficient preparations for the day when I embark on that path. I have failed to meet your expectations in that regards."

Li Qiye said helplessly while staring at her: "You really don't owe me anything but it is a pity that I couldn't force you. Just like the wise sages back at the Dongting Lake, they had many choices as well, such as picking other fertile lands in the nine worlds to be their home. But ultimately, just like you, they chose to stay in Heaven Spirit. This is your choice and theirs. Though I could have commanded all of you to do otherwise, that would be going against your own pursuit. This is your beloved home so you want to contribute, not wanting to see the day when it turns into ashes."

He ended with a sigh.

“It’s not just me.” Ruonan gently said with melancholy: “Many people have chosen this path with great struggles. Immortal Emperors fought on; treefathers used all the opportunities and sea gods continued to compromise! Despite being powerless to an extent, they still tried their best to win a glimmer of hope for this land. My father may not have wanted me to stay here but as his daughter, I should take up this mantle and try my best, whether it is because of my love for this world, the True Martial Island, or the sea demons. If my father was able to face everything, I will not disgrace his lifelong prestige either.”

## Chapter 1507: Ling Fengyun

---

After a brief lull, Li Qiye gently spoke: “I can only say that the times have changed. If I was still the Dark Crow, it would be my time to take care of everything and harvest. Afterward, it would be a fruitful and brilliant age. Unfortunately, it’s time for me to leave...”

“Young Master, whether it be your lovers or fallen brothers or even me, you don’t need to stay for anyone.” Ruonan replied in a serious manner: “Just keep walking forward to fight the last battle. No one can stop your advance; this is your greatest charm and why people admire you. If, say, you were to stop because of me, I would be a sinner in your life. In my eyes, you are the one I admire the most, so I don’t want to leave a stain in your life. That would be an unforgivable crime.”

She spoke sincerely; each word came from the heart.

“I know.” Li Qiye nodded: “I won’t be stopping for you, that’s just how life is. Even if someone used to be the ruler of the nine heavens or master of the universe, they still can’t have everything go their way.”

“Young Master, there’s no need to worry about me. I made my own choice so even if I die in battle one day, it will be without regrets since that would still be accomplishing one of my goals. In my life, to have met you and be able to follow you are my best moments and memories. You taught me how vast the world is, gave me a pursuit in life, and showed me the profundities of the grand dao.

“How many people in the world are actually aware of this? Most lives are ephemeral. Without your guidance, I could still have become a blessed daughter of the heavens, an existence that could walk proudly across the nine worlds. However... I wouldn’t be me, someone who withstands the arduous passing of time. You gave

me a firm dao heart — this is more precious than anything else!” Her eyes turned red at this point.

“Silly girl.” He wiped away the tears and smiled: “You are definitely a blessed existence. Even without me, you could still make it to this level. Your success today isn’t necessarily because of me. You yourself are worthy of pride. If your father was here, he would be proud because of his daughter even if your choice conflicts with his wish.”

Ruonan eventually smiled and gently shook her head.

“Okay, I’m going to try again and see if there are more people without eyes.” He lifted his head and chuckled: “Another big wave might create some effect.”

Ruonan knew what he wanted to do and smiled back. Her invincible Young Master has returned.

She eventually advised: “Young Master, you could go ask Terminus. Maybe he knows something.”

“Old Terminus does know quite a few things, but there’s no way for him to know the exact location. Someone of his level isn’t qualified to know about this or I would have figured it out long ago.”

\*\*\*

While everyone was awestruck by Li Qiye’s battle record, the sky over at the Dragon Demon Sea seemed to have been torn open.

“Whoosh!” A boundless light surged out and illuminated the entire region.

“Boom!” Waves of endless height were set off after a loud explosion. The entire Dragon Demon Sea quaked. All of the existences there were trembling with fear. Many fish and shrimp at the seabed didn’t dare to come out.

At this time, many people in this region and even in other places

of Heaven Spirit saw a gigantic ship. It was the size of a continent. The moment it entered this region, it set off the terrifying waves that impacted everything.

After seeing this, an expert exclaimed: “The Roaring Conch!”

Many fresh cultivators had never seen this scene before and were completely stunned. This might be the largest ship they have ever seen. Perhaps there wasn’t another one of this magnitude in the world.

Even a few older experts were dazed and murmured: “The legend is true, that’s the Roaring Conch.”

In Heaven Spirit, there was a rumor that the Roaring Conch wasn’t only a sect’s name. It was a ship, and the sect was established on it.

In fact, many people didn’t believe in its existence. After all, how could a lineage with two sea gods be built on a mere ship? How could it contain such a great lineage?

But the truth was as clear as day right now after people saw the size of this ship.

“Boom!” A pure sun slowly rose on the horizon. Once it reached high enough, the original sun in this region immediately turned bleak and lost its colors.

In front of this second sun was a royal throne with a middle-aged man sitting on it. He was in high spirits as he presided over the heavens itself as well as all other insignificant existences.

Despite not exerting his aura in full, this existence made others think that they were looking at a deity of legend!

An ancestor from Gu Chun’s four branches back at the Abyss Sea startingly exclaimed: “Ling Fengyun!”

A young cultivator who had never heard of this name before asked: “Who is that?”

“An Emperor Assailant.” The ancestor explained with a solemn expression: “His battle record is illustrious and almost to the point of being invincible. In his life, he has only lost to Immortal Emperor Hao Hai! Even after the emperor took the Heaven’s Will, Ling Fengyun could still last several hundred moves against him.”

“He’s strong to that level? Several hundred moves when an emperor is using his Heaven’s Will?” Many juniors were astonished to hear this.

Immortal Emperor Hao Hai had many legends about him. He created the Thousand Emperors Gate that produced four emperors! Nevertheless, Fengyun could still fight him for several hundred moves. This was no easy task.

“Yes, Fengyun is extremely heaven-defying.” The ancestor went on: “Even though he came from a small sect and never cultivated an imperial law in his life or came into the possession of an imperial weapon, he was still matchless until he met Immortal Emperor Hao Hai. The people of that era believed that if Immortal Emperor Hao Hai didn’t exist, Fengyun would have become emperor.”

The juniors from the four branches took a deep breath. This was a real Emperor Assailant!

“Li Qiye, you owe the Roaring Conch an explanation. Give me an answer after five days or face the consequences.” Fengyun’s voice echoed across the world as if he was ordering everyone.

Fengyun showed up and challenged Li Qiye right away — this shocked the experts in Heaven Spirit. Even those who didn’t know about him could tell that he was no joke due to his aura.

The disciple asked again: “Ling Fengyun is an ancestor from the Roaring Conch?”

“No.” The ancestor shook his head: “He’s not an ancestor or a disciple there. According to legend, he owed them his life when he

was young. Because of this, he became a sworn brother of their second sea god, the River Devourer Sea God. People even said that it was due to this connection that the sea god was able to reign supreme. Before being accepted by the Trident, Fengyun helped him many times. Some accounts stated that he even taught the sea god how to cultivate.”

The ancestor became serious after revealing this.

An old man on the verge of death back at the Seven Martial Pavilion slowly said: “The Roaring Conch still resorted to asking Ling Fengyun for help.”

The Seven Martial Goddess was standing next to him and stared at Fengyun with a dignified expression: “Ancestor, Fengyun is one of the strongest people in Heaven Spirit right now, right?”

This dying old man was the pavilion’s legendary being, the Hallowed Ancestor!

“That’s a fair statement. He is very powerful indeed.” The Hallowed Ancestor admitted: “He is one of my main concerns in protecting you during this generation. He’s much younger than me with a vigorous blood energy. Since he owed the conch his life, if they were to actually ask him, he would do his best to return the favor.”

# Chapter 1508: Legendary Godking

---

As Ling Fengyun sat high above in the sky, it looked as if all sentient beings must bow down to him. Even the strongest must prostrate at his feet.

The goddess had to ask: “How does he actually compare to you, Ancestor?”

Of course, the disciples from the pavilion would think that the Hallowed Ancestor was invincible. In fact, he was immensely mighty. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been the dao protector of two sea gods.

She wasn't blinded by this. Despite being confident in her ancestor's strength, she was still ready for the worst.

“Difficult to say.” The ancestor answered: “If I was younger, Ling Fengyun wouldn't be a problem. But now, my old bones can't endure much longer. I don't even know if I can perform the seventh style due to my withering vitality.”

The goddess shuddered after hearing this. No wonder he wanted to make a deal with Li Qiye. His circumstances weren't favorable any longer. His life depleting meant the withering of his blood energy.

He could fight several times without an issue, but if he pushed it too much, it would accelerate his death.

No wonder the Seashield Prince was so confident in the past. If Fengyun actually became his protector, it would be difficult to find someone who could stop them.

She murmured: “Fengyun is very powerful then.”

The ancestor smiled and said: “This is still a Legendary Godking, after all. How could he not be strong? Moreover, he has sealed himself long ago. Because of this, he is still as young as before — this is a great advantage compared to the other old geezers. He can

still last for another era, but not me.”

“A Legendary Godking? It’s not just a myth?” She was surprised.

He explained: “Of course, it’s just that ordinary Godkings can’t touch this level. In the world, Legendary Godkings are at the pinnacle of the path of the grand era. They are the real Emperor Assailants.”

Godkings also had their own classifications. On the path of the grand era, they are Grand Godking, Heavenly Godking, Supreme Godking, Apex Godking, World-Dominating Godking, and Nine Worlds’ Godking!

Because few people could make contact with Legendary Godkings, ordinary cultivators weren’t aware of this level.

“How is it defined?” The goddess felt curious about this legend. Some ancestors in their pavilion believed that the Hallowed Ancestor was a Legendary Godking himself. However, no one knows the exact details since Hallowed has never talked about this matter. The future generations haven’t seen him in action either. Thus, there were too many speculations about this particular level.

“The world has a different perspective compared to the true masters.” The ancestor chuckled and elaborated: “We’ll start with Emperor Assailants. The assailants in the minds of the masses are capable of fighting against an emperor for one hundred moves and up. Some old men even decided to flatter themselves. After fighting against an emperor once, they would call themselves an Emperor Assailant even if they lost after thirty or fifty moves.”

The ancestor continued: “The juniors don’t know and think that they’re the real deal. Meanwhile, the masters would only laugh at this type of existence as they would view the qualification of several hundred moves as inadequate!”

The goddess inquired: “Then what are the real Emperor Assailants?”

Hallowed smilingly answered: “At the top, the correct evaluation for an assailant would start at being a Legendary Godking. The truth is that ordinary people usually consider Nine Worlds’ Godkings to be assailants, but they can only exchange moves with an emperor at best.”

She couldn’t help asking: “How about sea gods then?”

“In fact, there are strong and weak sea gods. Of course, with the Trident in place, this difference becomes vaguer. However, without the weapon, one can see the disparity instantly. If this wasn’t the case, people wouldn’t be praising our Prime Sea God as the strongest. To compare sea gods and emperors, a sea god with a trident isn’t only an assailant. They become contenders that can proudly stand with the emperors!”

“Really?” Her expression changed after hearing this.

“I’m only saying that it’s possible.” The ancestor chuckled: “There are disparities among sea gods, but the same goes for emperors. Take our Prime Sea God for example; even without the Trident, he could already fight evenly with Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo, so with the weapon, he could probably suppress the emperor. However, if it was a different emperor, it wouldn’t be the same, such as Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, Immortal Emperor Fei, Immortal Emperor Fei Yang, and Immortal Emperor Hao. I’m afraid even if our ancestor had the Trident, it still wouldn’t be easy to contend against them!”

“Then what about grand completion Immortal Physiques versus sea gods?” After seeing that the ancestor was in the mood to talk today, the goddess humbly asked for guidance.

“In the eyes of the world, both grand completion Immortal Physiques and sea gods are the same and capable of contending against emperors. However, there is an inaccuracy in this.” The ancestor explained: “If a Legendary Godking has a grand completion Immortal Physique as well, then this person can

certainly fight an emperor.”

“As for a Nine Worlds’ Godking at grand completion, it would be a dangerous endeavor. Moreover, there are differences among Immortal Physique Laws as well. Cultivating a good or bad one has a direct effect on the power of the physique. However, from the perspective of a Legendary Godking, both grand completion and being a sea god are the same level.”

This was an enlightening conversation for the goddess.

“How about a sea god plus a grand completion physique?” She had a different question this time.

“Are you talking about the Roaring Conch Sea God?” He smiled: “Hard to say, his era was too long ago without too much information on it. Some said that his Void Physique didn’t reach grand completion while others believed the opposite. But regardless of whether he had it or not, it can’t be used as a reference point because he was born during Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng’s generation. That was his tragedy. It didn’t matter if he reached grand completion or not, he had to act nicely before a monster like Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng. Otherwise, the emperor’s words alone wouldn’t have trapped his son for a lifetime.”

The goddess pondered for a bit. She had also heard the legends about the Roaring Conch Sea God among the sea demons. He had great achievements but was completely suppressed due to being in the same era as Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng. This made the Roaring Conch quiet for a long period. Otherwise, it could have been even more brilliant. Maybe they would have a third sea god as well.

She thought about a loftier existence and asked: “Ancestor, what about the Black Dragon King?”

“The Black Dragon King!” Hallowed turned quiet for a bit when this awe-inspiring title was brought up. He eventually answered:

“The Black Dragon King is an exception, he’s unique across the ages.”

Even a character like the Hallowed Ancestor didn’t wish to talk about the Black Dragon King.

The goddess wasn’t stupid and could see the hesitation. She had enough and spoke while looking at the man above the clouds: “According to the rumors, Ling Fengyun is an Emperor Assailant.”

“He can indeed be considered one with common sense.” The ancestor said: “However, a few top existences wouldn’t agree.”

She inquisitively countered: “Why is that? Isn’t he still a Legendary Godking?”

“He’s one but not without flaws.” The ancestor explained: “His background isn’t good enough. As a golem born in Heaven Spirit and hailing from a small sect, he has some deficiencies. Because his cultivation laws at the start were insufficient, his grand dao has the same problem and can’t reach perfection. Ultimately, he defied all odds and became a Legendary Godking, but these flaws have affected his achievements.” He sighed at this point.

“He has fought against Immortal Emperor Hao Hai before. Even though no one saw the fight, in my estimation of his strength, he could probably withstand two to three hundred moves from the emperor. Of course, if it was a different emperor, he could last even longer. Unfortunately, he met an incredible emperor during his period. Hypothetically, if Fengyun came from an imperial lineage or cultivated a better merit law early on so that his grand dao wouldn’t have flaws, maybe his achievements would be even greater. It is precisely his background that made him give up on becoming an emperor and choose the path of the grand era instead. However, regardless of his shortcomings, in my personal opinion, he is still considered an Emperor Assailant, being a Legendary Godking and all.”

# Chapter 1509: Legend

---

The goddess was surprised. The Hallowed Ancestor rarely evaluated someone so highly. His favorable view meant that Ling Fengyun was indeed very mighty.

“Since he is so strong and is standing on the side of the Roaring Conch, I wonder if Young Noble Li can handle it? Ancestor, should we go and lend him a hand?” She became worried after being aware of Fengyun’s power.

The ancestor turned silent for a bit.

“What’s wrong, Ancestor?” She found this strange because Li Qiye was very important to their pavilion. She was confident that if he actually needed help, their Hallowed Ancestor wouldn’t sit idly by.

“This Li Qiye...” The ancestor paused for a bit before replying: “Although I haven’t seen him before, he won’t need our help from what you have told me. He’ll be able to surpass this danger and even sweep through all of Heaven Spirit until blood runs like the ocean along with echoing cries of anguish.” His eyes turned serious.

“How is that possible?” The goddess was skeptical. She wasn’t doubting Li Qiye’s power, but it was difficult to sweep through all of Heaven Spirit.

“There’s a high chance.” The Hallowed Ancestor spoke with a profound gaze: “If I am not mistaken, no one will be able to stop Li Qiye’s conquest. And not just Heaven Spirit, all of the nine worlds won’t be able to do so.”

“Really?” She was stunned for a bit. Even an Emperor Assailant wouldn’t bombastically talk about sweeping through the nine worlds.

“If he is that existence, then yes, and it wouldn’t be difficult at

all.” The Hallowed Ancestor explained: “No, he’ll easily take care of the ten worlds too. If Immortal Emperors were still in this world, they would retreat before Li Qiye and not dare to block his path!”

“How outrageous!” The goddess felt that this conversation was becoming more bizarre. She wouldn’t believe it if the speaker wasn’t her ancestor.

He slowly uttered: “It’s not outrageous at all if he’s that existence. It is to be expected as a matter of course.”

“What existence?”

“An eternal legend about a dark hand hiding behind the scenes of the nine worlds, an existence that has ruled for one era after another.” Hallowed became quite dignified talking about this issue.

“Ancestor, that’s just a legend.” The goddess had to interject: “It’s not necessarily true. Moreover, no one has ever been able to verify this legend’s existence. Li Qiye doesn’t look like it at all. If he had ruled the nine worlds in the past, he wouldn’t need to run around like this, he could directly become emperor.”

“No, this isn’t an empty legend.” He solemnly responded: “This existence does exist. Fewer than few can touch this level, and even less have been able to recognize it. However, I don’t know if Li Qiye is that legendary existence or not.”

“Such a character is real?” The goddess was stupefied. Even though she had heard this tale from the other ancestors in the past, they all thought that it wasn’t real.

However, the Hallowed Ancestor has verified it today. He continued on: “Yes, this dark hand behind the curtains has always been controlling the flow of the nine worlds.”

“What is it then? How is it able to control the nine worlds?” This prompted even more questions from the goddess.

“I don’t know.” The ancestor shook his head right away.

“Ancestor, you certainly know more.” The goddess acted like a young girl trying to get something with her playful tone.

He sighed in response: “It’s not that I don’t want to tell you, I really don’t know much more. I have never made contact with this existence and have only heard from the sea god.”

His expression turned earnest and serious after a brief pause: “Moreover, we shouldn’t talk about this matter so casually with other people. This is a taboo, so those who know about it wouldn’t bring it up. Recklessness will result in overreaching and can bring about a fatal disaster or even sect destruction. This is why people keep quiet about it all the time.”

The goddess took her time processing all of this. A long time later, she repeated: “So Li Qiye is really this existence?”

The ancestor sighed once more: “I don’t know. In my opinion, even if he isn’t, he is definitely related to that existence. I can’t think of anyone else in this world who can train such a disciple. Thirteen palaces... that existence is definitely the one to break all common sense in this world.”

The goddess became extremely curious and interested in Li Qiye’s origin after hearing this.

\*\*\*

Ling Fengyun has come into being in order to demand justice for the Roaring Conch — this news made all of Heaven Spirit quite shocked, especially the people who knew about Fengyun.

“Whoosh!” On the same day of his emergence, an immortal light soared from the Ancestral Terra. Three ancestral trees emitted a majestic life force that engulfed the entire world. An invincible will-like aura from the depths of the terra seemed to have awakened from the past and traveled to the present. Many people trembled before its coming.

“No mercy to those who oppose my Ancestral Terra. However, Li Qiye, I might spare you if you come to profess your crimes at the Ancestral Terra.” A decrepit voice came from the depths of the terra and echoed across Heaven Spirit. Despite its coarse nature, it sounded like the voice of an immortal.

“Who is that?” Even though no one could see the speaker, it must be someone terrifyingly powerful to utter such words. Moreover, after awakening, his will swept through all of Heaven Spirit and robbed many beings of their peace.

“Creek-Bamboo Immortal.” Some ancestors were stunned to hear this echoing voice: “Even someone as reclusive as him is coming out. Does the Ancestral Terra want to go all out in this generation?”

“Who is that?” A junior asked his ancestor since he hadn’t heard of this title before.

“The Dragon Bamboo Vice Ancestor’s forefather. He might even be the founder of that branch.” The ancestor responded: “Rumor has it that out of the three treefathers from the terra, two of them came from this branch. Even though he’s not the terra’s progenitor, some say that his status is the same as a treefather there.”

The junior took a deep breath upon hearing this. This was quite a history from this newly arrived existence.

The ancestor emotionally said: “This person hasn’t come out in a long time. Some even believed that he returned to the earth. Who would have thought that he would come out in this generation? Li Qiye did stir up quite a mess.”

Li Qiye on the True Martial Island also heard of this voice and simply smiled.

“Creek-Bamboo is out as well.” Ruonan smiled: “It looks like he’s coming for the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves in your possession. This

so-called revenge is only an excuse. After millions of years, many geniuses and children from the Ancestral Terra have died on the battlefield. Some brilliant prodigies were killed during the competition to become a treefather as well, but he never came out for retribution. What makes the vice ancestor so special? It's only for the grass."

"Well, it's about time for the old geezer to die." Li Qiye smiled casually: "He won't last much longer since he has renewed his life several times already, so he really wants the nine leaves this time."

Ruonan stated: "It looks like things are about to get fun. I'm afraid many reclusive old men will not be able to watch any longer since you have the grass. Moreover, they feel that they can win if they work together."

"That's a good thing. I was about to go cause some more trouble because no one else might give me a good reason to unsheath my blade. Now, someone is coming to our doors, there's no need for excuses to kill anymore. How convenient is this?"

# Chapter 1510: Stygian Monarch

---

First it was Ling Fengyun, now it's the Creek-Bamboo Immortal. In a short period of time, Heaven Spirit seemed to be exploding with news.

“This is insane! Both of them are Emperor Assailants, but it isn't time for the Heaven's Will competition just yet. If that day comes, just how many more existences of this level will come out?!” Even characters of the ancestor level were amazed.

“I think the Roaring Conch didn't want to give up and spent a lot of effort to beseech Ling Fengyun. They want to use this chance to re-establish their prestige and pick up the pieces that were trampled by Li Qiye.” A knowledgeable ancestor said: “As for Creek-Bamboo, I'm not quite sure. He must be aiming for the medicine of immortality.”

Many juniors and elders in the sect agreed with this analysis.

The conch suffered heavy losses this time. Their most promising talent died along with their strongest ancestor. This meant that the conch has lost their successor and their strongest ace. Under such conditions, they wouldn't be able to hold on to their status. Other sects that have been wanting to usurp them could strike at any time and even divide their sect.

Because of this, they tried their best to invite Ling Fengyun for revenge and to be their backing.

After two Emperor Assailants announced their messages, the frightened world paid attention to Li Qiye's actions. They wanted to know his response.

“Boom!” Right at this moment, an overbearing energy surged to the sky. One could see a huge figure over at the Jade Sea.

It was Li Qiye exerting his avatar. His head was above the firmament while his feet crushed the earth. His eyes looked like

two suns hanging in the sky. At this moment, he has released all of his blood energy. This terrifying mass looked like a tsunami assaulting the sun. Even the stars would be cut down like specks of dust.

At this moment, he held nothing back in his effort to deter the world while sweeping across all existences.

“One or two random dogs come out and think it is enough to force me to submit? You all think too highly of yourselves! Don’t think that you’re actually an Emperor Assailant after exchanging a few moves with an emperor!” His tyrannical voice flowed across Heaven Spirit: “Very well, come. Name the time and place; make sure to come together so that I can kill everyone at once to avoid wasting time.”

The world turned silent. Many people were befuddled and couldn’t say anything.

In the past, they had seen just how arrogant and aggressive Li Qiye was back when he dealt with Zhentian’s group, but he was now treating Creek-Bamboo and Ling Fengyun in the same manner.

Keep in mind that these two are Emperor Assailants. They’re much more powerful than Zhentian and the prince.

If assailants were random dogs in his eyes, could anyone be considered an expert in this world then?

An ancestor murmured: “How imperious! Is there someone more arrogant than him?”

“Ancestor, you haven’t seen Li Qiye in person. His overbearing nature is much more than this, a few sentences can’t describe it.” An expert replied: “I feel that he is definitely strong enough to kill an Emperor Assailant. His personality is one that stays true to his word. His arrogance is predicated on his absolute confidence and strength.”

“This is Li Qiye who will be the Eternal Prime Emperor!” Some people had a blind fanaticism towards Li Qiye at this moment: “No one but him will become emperor in this generation. No one can deter his merciless path!”

“There might only be one Fiercest in all of history.” No one mocked his declaration. Instead, they became sentimental from his achievements. They felt that this was how he should be acting, the natural order of the world.

This was a world of the strong. Once a person reaches a particular level, many people would have blind faith in them and give them their unconditional support!

“Whoosh!” After Li Qiye answered Ling Fengyun and Creek-Bamboo, a portal seemed to be opening back at Godhalt.

“Booom!” Endless darkness enveloped all of Godhalt and eventually spread across all of Heaven Spirit.

“Count me in.” A supreme voice in the darkness coldly uttered: “Killing my descendant is a crime that deserves death!”

People shuddered after hearing this voice. They felt as if they had fallen into a gap in a glacier that exuded a biting coldness!

A devil seemed to be awakening in the depths of the Spirit Abyss. Everyone could smell the stench of blood in the air. This was the harbinger of death.

“Who is this person? He feels just like a devil king.” Even ancestors had goosebumps once the darkness dissipated.

“He can be considered a godfiend.” An ancestor seriously replied: “He is the Stygian Monarch. Like his title, his existence itself brings darkness to the world.”

“What kind of character is he?” The juniors had many questions about the ancient beings coming out today.

An older ancestor explained: “The only surviving founder of the

Spirit Abyss. Among these founders, he might not be the strongest, but he has been sealed for the longest time in the earth, so he has become the strongest there.”

This prompted the next inquiry: “How strong is he?”

“I don’t know.” The older ancestor gently shook his head: “Rumor has it that this old sect has an incredible treasure. The charming spirits believe that this is one of their race’s primordial artifacts left behind by the charming spirit progenitor. Back in that era, countless experts in the nine worlds desired this artifact, and countless charming spirit lineages demanded it, including one sect with three emperors. The charming spirits back then believed that this treasure belonged to all spirits, so they demanded the surrender of this treasure.”

With that, the older ancestor turned silent for a moment.

“The abyss’ founders refused?” A younger ancestor broke the silence.

“Yes, their founders refused.” The old ancestor nodded: “This artifact is too tempting and powerful. Of course, with their refusal came the outbreak of a terrible war. Blood stained all of Heaven Spirit.”

“Did they win?” The experts here were moved by this tale. After all, this was a war involving all of the nine worlds.

“I don’t know, even my ancestors haven’t been born during that era.” The old ancestor smiled: “However, later on, rumor has it that the abyss barely won using the power of the treasure. They killed numerous experts from the nine worlds. Some said that these founders’ darkness shrouded the worlds during that battle.”

The young ancestors were amazed after hearing this. They could imagine how terrifying and bloody this war was.

“In any case, the founders there managed to protect this treasure and established their sect’s current position.” The old ancestor

continued on: “Of course, they paid a great price as well. After the war, only three founders managed to survive, and the Stygian Monarch is the last one to make it to the present.”

The young ancestor didn’t know that the Spirit Abyss had such a glorious past. Despite not producing an emperor, they still fought against the nine worlds — this was a feat worthy of pride for many eras.

“What is this treasure?” An ancestor asked the key question.

The old ancestor shook his head: “Who knows? The future generations might not be privy to this information since the abyss stopped coming out after the war. However, because of its existence and the Stygian Monarch, no one had any ideas about the abyss again. Rumor has it that this treasure is definitely stronger than an Immortal Emperor True Treasure and maybe a bit weaker than the Trident.”

This came as a shock to the ancestors here. In the minds of many, true treasures were already invincible enough.

\*\*\*

“So there are three Emperor Assailants wanting to fight Li Qiye?” Someone found this unbelievable after Stygian came out.

“This devil is crawling out too.” An old undying sneered after hearing this news: “Looks like he’s about to die too, so he wants the nine leaves!”

In fact, there was no lack of dying monsters wanting this medicine of immortality. However, because these three have shown their faces, these undyings had to give up. After all, they were a bit weaker than the three.

# Chapter 1511: The Dream Empyrean

---

The world was shocked by the emergence of the three great masters. Not to mention the other experts, even ancestors of the Godking level didn't dare to say anything. This was a confrontation of the highest order.

“Anyone else?” After the Stygian Monarch came out, Li Qiye once again showed up with his overbearing avatar. He loomed over Heaven Spirit and his voice echoed: “Any more random dogs and cats wanting to crawl out? If you want to fight, then come out already. I will take all of you on so just come, don't waste my time.”

All listeners took a deep breath after hearing this without commenting. Li Qiye didn't give a damn against these three existences and still boasted before the world as if he alone was untouchable. The word “domineering” alone wasn't enough to describe his current posture.

“I alone am invincible.” In the end, people could only use this common phrase to describe Li Qiye at this second.

He might be the only one who would dare to act without scruples like this against his opponents. Even Meng Zhentian wouldn't dare to do so when he was alive.

“He must have other unstoppable means that we haven't seen yet.” An expert who has seen Li Qiye in action before speculated with dread.

In the past, Li Qiye also called Zhentian's group as random dogs and cats. Nevertheless, he stays true to his words and slaughtered all of them.

At this moment, he was doing the same thing against Emperor Assailants. The crowd has learned that this wasn't out of arrogance but absolute confidence and power. This meant that he didn't use

his full arsenal against Zhentian's group and still had other tricks up his sleeve.

This thought scared many people. One ancestor murmured: "Just how strong is Li Qiye then? Is he really capable of challenging everything?"

"That's probably the case. What can't he do after coming up with thirteen palaces?" Another speculated.

"Boom!" An answer came against Li Qiye. A divine light soared from the Dream Empyrean and a bright moon emerged. It was gigantic and encompassed the entire territory of the sect. From the distant, it looked just like a planet with the shape of a moon.

Its light illuminated all of Heaven Spirit. Even the sun hanging up high became dimmed against this bright light.

"Li Qiye, don't think Heaven Spirit has no one to stop you. I, Shen Mengtian, will take you on!" A voice erupted and made everyone dizzy!

"What?!" Someone screamed after hearing this: "Shen Mengtian? Isn't, isn't he dead already?"

Shen Mengtian. When this name echoed across Heaven Spirit, many sealed undyings underground were shaken. No one has expected this development.

"Why is Shen Mengtian still alive?" Some undyings couldn't believe their ears and became stunned.

[Shen Mengtian was the Dream Empyrean's progenitor](#). He came from the Spirit Abyss and created his own sect later using his own name.

There has been a rumor that he has cultivated his divine reflection to the limit. Some even believed that he had the highest achievement in this aspect out of all the charming spirits.

Because of this, he could derive and calculate everything.

Emperors had asked him before and borrowed his ability to figure out some mysteries.

Because of this, Shen Mengtian was called an immortal teacher by future generations because some emperors have referred to him in this manner out of respect.

He stopped appearing in future generations so people thought he was dead. Even many disciples from his own sect believed in this. Thus, his sudden appearance took everyone by a storm.

“A centipede just won’t give up. Looks like this old geezer has been trying all this time without dying.” Another ancient being murmured: “Looks like he needs the nine leaves now for the final gamble before death.”

Li Qiye’s avatar saw the moon above the Dream Empyrean and smiled: “Shen Mengtian, right? Come, I’m waiting. Anyone else? One last chance to join. Miss the chance today and there will be no more!”

The people in the world smiled wryly after seeing his eager appearance. Anyone else would be pissing their pants in fear right now facing against so many powerful foes but he didn’t give a damn.

“Count this old man in.” A tired voice came about with the coming of an ordinary old man.

“Imperial Dualchild!” Many recognized him right away because he has shown up at the Reincarnation Valley before.

“Okay, you’re in. Is that it? Anyone else wants to fight?” Li Qiye smiled freely and looked around again.

In this brief period, the world was silent. Everyone knew that only the strongest characters in Heaven Spirit were eligible to participate. These were the apex existences, the most mighty outside of Immortal Emperors.

No one answered him after this final call. Not just anyone was

qualified to enter this war.

“Okay, just the five of you.” Li Qiye laughed: “Come and do your best, this is your last chance. Five days later at the Broken God Cliff, I’ll be waiting!” With that, his avatar disappeared.

“Five days later at the Broken God Cliff!” This news spread across Heaven Spirit like a storm.

“Should we go watch?” One expert asked his peer.

“Are you insane?!” The guy answered: “Even if you are standing outside of the cliff, just one remnant gale alone will annihilate you instantly. People like us can’t watch a battle of this level. Only Godkings can.”

“Focus on the cliff right now! I don’t care how many refined jades we will have to use, open the heavenly mirror right now and lock on it!” Many imperial lineages and ancient sects hastily made this decision.

“Come, come. Five invincible masters against Li Qiye. The victor will be determined in five days.” Many bets began overnight.

“Going against five by himself. Can Li Qiye do it? They’re all Emperor Assailants. I don’t think anyone nowadays can take all five at the same time.” Those who held Li Qiye in high regards became worried.

“He definitely can. Just look at his thirteen palaces.” Some of his supporters had a blind faith and thought that he was omnipotent.

“Li Qiye’s victory is imminent for he is unbeatable.” Some crazy fans even started a slogan for him.

However, the majority of the great power was very careful. Even the sects who wanted to get closer to him had to pause.

In their eyes, if Li Qiye were to lose, it would be a disaster for them having picked his side.

While the world was in a furor, Li Qiye was relaxing back at True

Martial Island with Tantai Ruonan by his side. It was a moon viewing party.

“Young master, you’re finally going all out this time.” Ruonan smiled and said.

“Not quite. I’m just baiting the snakes from their caves and then I can conveniently destroy the Ancestral Terra. This is a lineage with three ancestral trees so I want to see how the Divine Tree Ridge will react after I destroy them.” Li Qiye couldn’t help smiling.

If outsiders were to hear this, their face would turn pale instantly. Li Qiye actually wanted to destroy the terra. This was a place known to be unassailable even by Immortal Emperors.

Ruonan simply smiled for she has always been full of confidence about her young master. If he had such a plan, it meant that this was his goal from the very beginning.

The reputation of the terra was meaningless against her young master’s schemes.

Shen Mengtian = Divine Dream Heaven or Dream Empyrean

# Chapter 1512: Mobilization

---

The entire Heaven Spirit World enjoyed serenity within the last five days. Many experts held their breath waiting for the day to come.

It passed by quickly but it seemed like an eternity to these experts. Everyone wanted to know the result right away.

All the lineages and cultivators here understood that the fate of Heaven Spirit would change after this battle.

If Li Qiye were to win, it meant that he was strong enough to deal with all of Heaven Spirit or even the nine worlds. Nothing could hinder his path if he could slay the five masters.

At that point, both imperial lineages and sea god's sects would have to lower their head and submit to his rule.

However, if the five masters were to win, it might be the start of an oligarchy. Heaven Spirit would be under the shadows of these masters for a long period.

Thus, this battle will decide the fate of the world. There was a risk that it would end the golden era of Heaven Spirit as well because Zhentian has fallen. If Li Qiye were to die as well, it meant that Heaven Spirit would have to forfeit the competition for Immortal Emperor.

Everyone had a conflicting opinion about the outcome. Many sects that had relations with the Spirit Abyss, Roaring Conch, and the Ancestral Terra wanted Ling Fengyun's group to win because it would be their time to reign afterward.

On the other hand, a larger side hoped for Li Qiye's victory since he would be able to usher in a new generation with Heaven Spirit being at the top of the nine worlds!

"I hope that Li Qiye can create another miracle and kill the five masters to ascend to the throne." A few charming spirit lineages

became very hopeful.

Even some powers who supported Zhentian before wanted Li Qiye to come out victoriously in this earthshaking battle.

“Li Qiye’s victory is imminent!” The slogans could be heard around the world by his fans.

Of course, some sects that did want Li Qiye to win didn’t dare to express it publicly out of fear due to his strong opponents.

The five days have tortured the experts of this world long enough despite passing by quickly. The entire world was waiting with great anticipation for the ultimate war.

“Boom!” Finally, the first to mobilize after the deadline was the Spirit Abyss from Godhalt. Moreover, they didn’t use a dao portal but directly crossed the world instead.

It looked like a huge fortress opening its icy doors. A cavalry rushed out like a tsunami and soared to the sky. The atmosphere was engulfed with a murderous chill. Darkness emerged as if a nightmare was assaulting the world and suffocating its inhabitants.

This cavalry consisted of several ten thousand troops. They all had full black armor so no one could see their face. A person sat on a throne raised by eight old men inside the cavalry.

This throne was pitch black as if it was created from a supreme draconic rune metal. The old man on top looked just like an untouchable godfiend.

His old face was covered with wrinkles but his black hair betrayed his other features. It was actually shimmering with a black luster. His eyes were naturally black with flashing darkness. When he opened his eyes, it resembled the opening of a dark world. This was a dark ruler, the harbinger of darkness.

However, this wasn’t the most terrible factor. Despite being carried by others, everyone had an illusion that this old man was

one with the cavalry itself. The cavalry was an extension of his arms. He could freely control it as if it was part of his body.

“That’s the legendary Stygian Legion from the abyss.” A knowledgeable ancestor felt a chill as he murmured.

“Why does he want to take a legion along for this highest level of battle? Such a legion can’t possibly stop Li Qiye.” A few juniors didn’t understand why the monarch brought along his legion at all.

“Blood energy, they will share blood energy.” An older ancestor explained: “Because it is such a high-level battle, he has to take his legion along. This will be an ultimate and ferocious battle. Their group is older with withered vitality on the verge of death. After such a battle, even if they were to win, they would die from exerting too much strength after returning.”

“They want to borrow their juniors’ vitality?” A different youth was surprised.

“That’s one way to put it but it isn’t that simple.” The ancestor continued: “You can’t just use your juniors’ vitality even if they agree. Everyone’s vitality is different since they cultivated different merit laws. Forcefully fusing this type of blood energy would lead to contention and even qi deviation...”

“As for this Stygian Legion, it has been trained carefully with each disciple handpicked. Their cultivation laws are very particular as well. Some were even taught by the monarch so their vitality could resonate with his own.”

He paused for a bit before continuing: “Such a legion required a great amount of resources. Moreover, after each member died, the cost of replacing them would be quite unbelievable. Because of this, this legion could share their vitality with the monarch. It is the pillar of the Spirit Abyss, its strongest legion and ace card.”

The monarch and his legion traveled forward with a magnificent

and unstoppable momentum, capable of slaying both gods and devils standing in their way.

After the Stygian Monarch left, it was Shen Mengtian's turn. He was indeed from the Spirit Abyss since his action coincided with the monarch.

“Buzz!” At the ancestral ground of the Dream Empyrean, a door was opened on the moon hanging in the sky. Two rows of experts dressed in white completely came out.

Eventually, they numbered in the tens of thousands and filled the world with their boundless light.

The aura of this legion was completely different from the Stygian Legion. They emitted a holy light as if they were the messengers of the divine race. When they appeared in the sky, holy totems showed up as well.

These totems seemingly bathed Heaven Spirit in a holy light. A divine race was descending to the world.

Next, Shen Mengtian came out of the moon. The astonishing part was that he only looked around forty instead of being old and feeble.

His aura wasn't earth-shattering. On the contrary, he purposely hid it so he looked very scholarly. Nevertheless, each of his actions still seemed so dominating as if he was the ruler of the gods. He was born to be unreachable.

“Aren't people saying that Shen Mengtian is on the verge of death? He looks so young right now, in the middle of his prime even.” Many were shocked to see his appearance.

“That's only his flesh.” A big shot from the last generation replied: “Once you are strong enough and open your heavenly gaze, you will find that below this vessel is a withering divinity and vitality. At his level, maintaining his external appearance isn't hard. It can't hide his weakening true form though.”

The junior understood after hearing this explanation. Even if he had opened his heavenly gaze, he still wouldn't be able to see through anything because he wasn't strong enough.

“Buzz!” Each expert in this legion opened their divine reflection and pointed it at the same source. Next, this ray of light instantly reached the Broken God Cliff and turned into a dao portal.

The legion and Shen Mengtian disappeared right away and emerged again at the cliff in the next second.

Everyone was amazed by this scene because they haven't seen such a transmission on this scale before.

“That's Shen Mengtian for you.” One supreme ancestor from the charming spirit race had to admit: “He has cultivated these divine reflections to the limit so he could do whatever he pleases.”

Many charming spirits became envious at this spectacle.

“They are bringing their legion along to make up for their own lack of vitality. So now, will Li Qiye be able to handle it?” Some people started to worry.

In the past, all felt that Li Qiye's biggest advantage was his youth and vigor so he could last longer than these two.

In other words, even if he couldn't kill them, he could drag out the battle until they die on their own. Alas, the legions brought along solved this particular problem.

# Chapter 1513: I Am One And Only Across The Ages

---

The Stygian Monarch and Shen Mengtian have arrived at the Broken God Cliff. Everyone else was waiting for the others to come.

“Is Li Qiye here?” Shen Mengtian loomed over the world after arriving.

“What’s the hurry? I’m right here now.” Li Qiye’s lazy voice came about.

“Boom!” Before he even showed up, thirteen palaces rushed to the sky and became incomparably large to suppress the entire Heaven Spirit World.

At this moment, everyone had an absurd feeling that their world has become a prison while the warden was Li Qiye.

Each gigantic palace acted as their own fortress at this moment with brimming golden brilliance. Figures emerged within as these strands of light were woven together. They looked just like deities.

“Boom!” Li Qiye has finally appeared riding the Tetra-war Bronze Chariot.

“Rawr!” A large Qilin pulled the chariot with wondrous speed.

“Aooo!” A White Tiger was maintaining the rear.

A True Dragon circled on the right side while issuing its cry followed by a mighty phoenix hymn. The bird was on the left to protect the grand dao.

Su Yonghuang personally acted as the driver for Li Qiye this time while holding the reins. Despite being his master in-name, she was willing to take up this role for him.

“Bang!” The palaces began to rotate. Some deities inside were

prostrating on the other ground while others slowly raised both hands to the sky. One golden path stretched from their hands. In the blink of an eye, this supreme path spanned from the ocean all the way to the Broken God Cliff. The chariot crushed through space while traveling on this path.

Before this pathway powered by the deities, the lords of this world kneeled in fear, not daring to move an inch!

At this time, his prestige subjected the world to an immense pressure. Despite his ordinary appearance and a lack of invincible aura, his thirteen palaces have already represented everything.

He was the master of the nine worlds, the tyrant of the myriad ages, an existence above the deities and emperors. The myriad dao and the yin and yang must prostrate before him!

This scene shocked all of Heaven Spirit. Both ancestors that have been sealed for millions of years and untouchable monsters were completely speechless.

Under such a grandiose mobilization, people couldn't help feeling a sense of reverence as if they were greeting an Immortal Emperor. Such sincere respect came from the bottom of the heart and mind!

“A man should aspire to be like that, to exceed the ages and become the master of the nine worlds!” Many felt their blood boiling with heroism and wanted nothing more than to join Li Qiye's banner, ready to contribute to his cause!

“No wonder why he is so overbearing and treats others with disdain. Look at those palaces, just this achievement alone is peerless in history.” An old undying was stunned before the suppressing palaces.

“That's him, it's really him!” Meanwhile, even a character like the Hallowed Ancestor was aghast. He has taught two sea gods and proudly walked over the nine worlds before. However, his legs

turned weak at this moment with the urge to kneel and a non-dissipating sense of admiration in his heart.

For him, this wasn't shameful at all. Fear was normal to face such an existence. This was someone who has slaughtered Immortal Emperors before. He was not even an ant compared to the being moving in his gaze.

Even kneeling before Li Qiye wasn't embarrassing at all!

"The mythical chariot, Tetra-War. That's him for sure..." After a long time, emotions still overwhelmed Hallowed.

\*\*\*

Despite being called a cliff, it wasn't in front of a mountain or inside the ocean. It was part of the sky.

For a million miles of this expanse were stony debris. The small ones were the size of a finger while the large was as big as an island.

At the center of this vast area was a huge cliff. It has been severed horizontally and shattered. One could only imagine how large it was before being destroyed.

Judging by the inflicted damage, the rubble floating around in this sky all fell down from this cliff.

There were also broken remnant dao laws around. Some were more intact than the others. A few were still connected.

This was known as the largest battlefield of Heaven Spirit. Its origin was unknown. Rumor has it that all supreme battles in this world would take place here. This was the reason why it was so broken. But strange enough, it never collapsed completely even after each great battle.

After arriving at the cliff, Li Qiye sat above everyone and glanced at Shen Mengtian and Stygian.

"Such fanfare." Stygian coldly uttered. Both Shen Mengtian and

his expression darkened after seeing a junior putting up an act before them, especially the thirteen palaces sealing all of Heaven Spirit.

The monarch has fought all over the nine worlds before. However, his display was one step below this junior today. It made him feel very uncomfortable.

“So what?” Li Qiye’s eyes darted downward at the monarch: “If you want to act cool, then go ahead and show off your thirteen palaces. I’m afraid you can’t even if you wanted to!”

Such retort left the monarch furious without a response.

At this moment, so many heavenly mirrors were pointed at the cliff. Many great powers and imperial lineages were watching. The disciples from these sects greatly enjoyed Li Qiye’s retort.

These invincible existences have always been imperious but now, they have been slapped by a junior. How could the younger ones not feel good about it?

“Whoosh!” The Ancestral Terra at the Jade Sea was now filled with light. A branch stretched out infinitely from there.

There was a leaf growing on this branch of an unfathomable size as if it was a great square with a legion on top.

This legion also numbered in the ten thousands. Each of the members was full of life. It gave the feeling that they were trees themselves and the square was a great forest. A fresh air flowed everywhere with majestic lifeforce, allowing others to be brimming with vitality.

The legion protected an old man. He was quite thin with a youthful face despite his gray hair. He wore a feathered robe with several leaves scattered around his body. He seemed like an old immortal due to his rich lifeforce.

The majestic vitality of the experts seemed to be attracted to his body. However, it wasn’t that he was borrowing their vitality but

they were the one growing on him.

“Creek Bamboo Immortal!” Even the experts from the last generation were very respectful towards him.

This was the oldest and most cryptic ancestor from the Ancestral Terra. Few knew about his stories but two treefathers from this sect actually came from his branch. Just this achievement alone was earth-shattering enough.

Li Qiye glanced dismissively at him and said: “Two more who aren’t here yet.”

“Excuse my tardiness.” An old man took one step across the world and instantly arrived at the cliff.

He didn’t come alone since he had another old man beside him. This friend’s body has turned into wood with his face covered in barks. He looked just like a withered tree.

There was nothing special about him, completely inconspicuous and unmemorable.

“Let me introduce someone, this is Fellow Daoist Driedtree whom I invited to join us today.” Dualchild slowly said.

Shen Mengtian, Stygian, and even Creek Bamboo nodded their head as a form of greeting.

Creek Bamboo had to say: “I didn’t expect Fellow Daoist Driedtree to come out as well.”

“How could I miss such a fun occasion? Plus, Brother Dualchild invited me as well.” The old man named Driedtree smiled and said.

# Chapter 1514: Tumultuous Change

---

No one could tell how this ordinary old man called “Fellow Daoist Driedtree” was special at all. However, to be considered a “fellow daoist” by someone like Creek Bamboo meant that he was extraordinary.

However, he was truly too normal looking. Many great powers watching from their mirror couldn’t figure out his identity at all despite concerted effort.

“Driedtree Divine Ancestor!” Finally, the oldest ancestor from an imperial lineage exclaimed.

“Who is that?” The juniors quickly asked.

“An invincible character from my generation.” The ancestor said: “Rumor has it that he is a withered ancestral tree coming back to life and has the previous memories of the treefather.”

After hearing this, the juniors gasped. One of them asked: “Isn’t that the same as a treefather coming back to life?”

“It’s just a rumor, who knows?” The ancestor murmured: “It’s a pity that he was only one step away from being a treefather back in my time, I don’t know why he failed in the end though.”

Eventually, more ancestors recognized him through the heavenly mirrors. They naturally became shocked.

Dualchild was indeed amazing with many connections. In just a short period, he was able to drag out another heavyweight.

Like he has said in the past towards Li Qiye, if he were to become Li Qiye’s dao protector, he would offer him other advantages in the form of resources and connections. It looked like he wasn’t only boasting today.

However, it wasn’t too strange. After all, he was a child between an emperor and a treemother. Due to his prestigious background,

the unstoppable Era Evaders from that age probably had some relationships with him.

“Still missing one.” Li Qiye still didn’t care on his throne. He didn’t even bother looking at Driedtree.

Driedtree’s eyes turned cold from this aloof act with glittering starlights. They illuminated the entire world. However, he quickly converged them and assumed his calm demeanor afterwards.

“Boom!” After Li Qiye finished speaking, a wave rushed to the nine heavens. A gigantic ship entered the vast sea and set off a vast tsunami.

This was the Roaring Conch. It traveled through the sea just like a large drifting continent.

One person stepped out to the deck. It was Ling Fengyun. Each of his step was an entire world or an ocean.

His pace was so leisure just like a stroll. It didn’t look like he was entering a battle at all.

The winds and clouds moved with his step. The world was shocked; the sun and moon made way for him while the stars tilted.

Everyone could feel Heaven Spirit shaking as he walked towards the Broken God Cliff. He didn’t seem to be moving, the Broken God Cliff was moving towards him instead.

This illusion made many experts watching him dizzy and didn’t dare to look any further.

“Ling Fengyun is too strong.” One ancestor was convinced by his strength. Just his step alone was enough to daze many people, causing some to fall flat on the ground. Once he actually took action, wouldn’t he be able to slaughter everyone instantly?

The Roaring Conch was following right behind him. It wasn’t only capable of floating in the ocean but could fly freely as well.

Its monstrous size didn't hinder its crazy speed at all. If it was considered a flying treasure, it would be among the top ten in terms of speed in all of Heaven Spirit.

Once Fengyun made it to the cliff, the conch finally stopped with some distance in between to watch.

“The conch wants to let everyone in the world know their position and that Ling Fengyun is their backing. This is another attempt to establish their prestige.” The older generation naturally understood why the Roaring Conch also came.

After all, the death of the Conch Overlord was a great blow to their sect. They must do something about their reputation or many great powers would start to covet and even divide their territories.

The world became quiet with Fengyun's arrival. In a jiffy, the six invincible existences formed a pincer to surround Li Qiye.

Shen Mengtian, Stygian Monarch, Imperial Dualchild, Driedtree Divine Ancestor, Creek Bamboo Immortal and Ling Fengyun. The six of them circled around the cliff like deities. They resembled uncrossable demonic mountains or unsurpassable lightning ponds.

Countless cultivators held their breath in Heaven Spirit. Everyone understood that regardless of the victor, the direction and fate of Heaven Spirit would be changed completely.

Another group was hiding right outside of the cliff. These faint figures were hiding all of their auras and blood energy.

The experts capable of watching in person were the real deal. Only a personal viewing would be fruitful for this great battle. This was the way to understand each techniques' power and the slight transformations!

Of course, they were the strongest characters in Heaven Spirit. Godking was only the entry level in this place. In order to truly feel the profundity of this battle and learn from it, one needed to be an Apex Godking at the very least.

Before reaching this level, it was impossible to learn just from watching the fight. Of course, the cultivators below this level wouldn't even be able to see the attacks themselves, let alone understanding the little intricacies.

Most dust-ladened ancestors wouldn't come out so easily but a battle of this level was exceedingly rare. A few of them couldn't help coming out to watch in person.

On top of the cliff, the combatants' gaze was fixated on Li Qiye. Despite not attacking just yet, just their glares were frightening enough with supreme pressure.

Anyone else would have pissed in their pants being the target of so many masters. However, Li Qiye was still nonchalant as ever on his chariot and continued to look at the clouds.

The only sounds left in Heaven Spirit were heartbeats. Even the winds, waves, and time itself seemed to have stopped.

"Young man, one can't help but admire your courage. At the very least, when I was young like you, I wasn't so domineering." Ling Fengyun commented while staring at Li Qiye.

"This is not courage." Li Qiye casually responded: "In my eyes, all of you are no different from dead men. Why should I be afraid of some small potatoes?"

His opponents certainly didn't like this comment. Murderous intents rose from their eyes.

The experts watching from the mirror could only smile wryly. It was not like he has only started this arrogant act recently. Those who knew him understood that this was his style regardless of who he was facing.

Ling Fengyun actually laughed in response without becoming angry: "Impressive, the future generation will surpass us. You can't be blamed for being so arrogant due to your achievements in spite of your age. Unfortunately, you are only missing a bit of

finesse and wisdom. A wise person would have chosen differently.”

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “I actually want to hear what kind of choice a wise person would make instead.”

Fengyun looked at him and replied: “In all of history, you might be the only one who has cultivated thirteen palaces. If you could have avoided today, the throne is certainly yours for the taking. I am someone who can appreciate talents and have no ill wills towards you. However, you have killed people from the Roaring Conch so you should have given them a reasonable answer.”

Li Qiye smiled: “Is that so? Sounds like you are willing to make peace.”

Fengyun responded: “Not to that level. However, seeing your supreme achievements and domineering courage truly moved me. It is a shame that such a peerless genius will have to fall today. A person like you should become an emperor for Heaven Spirit instead of dying like this.”

Such shift of attitude caught everyone off guard, especially the experts sitting in front of their mirrors.

# Chapter 1515: Ling Fengyun's Proposition

---

The crowd was surprised to see this. Everyone knew that Ling Fengyun was here for the Roaring Conch, seeking vengeance for the dead Conch Overlord.

However, he was actually putting in good words for Li Qiye with a more pacifistic inching. It took everyone by surprise.

“He ought to do this.” One old ancestor agreed with his view and nodded: “The thirteen palaces is only and only in history. Heaven Spirit should work together to groom a talent like Li Qiye so he could become an emperor, the best of all time. At that point, those who help him will become meritorious heroes and the myriad races in the nine worlds will come to Heaven Spirit offering their tributes.”

In fact, many insightful ancestors and big shots agreed with Fengyun and felt that taking down Li Qiye would be too regrettable.

“Is this your personal opinion or are you representing everyone here?” Li Qiye became greatly amused and smiled.

Fengyun looked at him and slowly elaborated: “If you are willing to take a step back, I can deliberate with everyone here. And as for your feud with the Roaring Conch, I can be the arbitrator as well. You just need to confess your crimes and sincerely apologize and everything shall be dropped.”

“Fengyun is indeed a wise character, to be so benevolent. Ordinary people can’t compare to him.” Many couldn’t help but sigh after hearing this.

“If Brother Fengyun wishes for a truce, it isn’t hard either.” Shen Mengtian stared at Li Qiye for a long time before adding.

“I can also let go of this feud but there needs to be a deal.” Dualchild joined in.

“No animosity lasts forever in this world.” Creek Bamboo finally spoke: “It just depends on whether you are willing or not.”

In an instant, the tense atmosphere that could erupt at any moment eased down due to Ling Fengyun’s change of attitude.

“I hope they don’t fight.” Someone clenched their fist and said: “If Heaven Spirit could have solidarity with six invincible characters protecting Li Qiye, he will definitely be unstoppable in the nine worlds. Who will be able to compete against him?”

Thus, many hoped for a peaceful outcome between the two sides since it would be very beneficial for Heaven Spirit.

“What’s the condition?” Li Qiye was not anxious at all in his response.

“The Reincarnation Nine-Leaves!” Driedtree took the initiative before the others; “As long as you hand over the grass, everything is negotiable.”

The others glanced at each other and didn’t speak just yet.

“So you want the grass?” Li Qiye leisurely said: “This is a supreme immortal medicine. With it, one would have the chance to reincarnate with their previous memories. So many people have coveted this item throughout history. Even emperors want to keep it around as a backup plan for the future.”

“What? This grass can actually do that?” Those who didn’t know about the medicine were shocked.

In Godhalt, everyone knew that it was an immortal medicine. Some even thought that it would grant eternal life but no one knew the exact details until now.

“Who wouldn’t want to be reborn again?” Even the most stoic ancestor swallowed their saliva with greed.

There was indeed a chance at rebirth with the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves. One leaf had a twenty percent chance of success.

However, the outcome was not always the same. The chance of keeping one's memories was even lower than a regular reincarnation.

For other experts, this gamble might be worth it but an emperor wouldn't necessarily want to place everything on such a low probability.

In fact, Shen Mengtian and the Stygian Monarch were gulping after hearing this and were clearly tempted.

This wasn't strange at all. All of them outside of Ling Fengyun had a withering lifespan. Moreover, they have prolonged it many times in the past so that was no longer an option.

They had two choices at this moment. Either wait for death or to take a chance in eating the grass. In their eyes, nothing was more tempting than a rebirth. Even if it was only twenty percent chance, they would still take it!

Fengyun, on the other hand, was the youngest and full of vitality. Because of this, he was the only one who didn't need the nine leaves.

"There is only one, how will you all divide it?" Li Qiye chuckled and stared at the group.

The group reached a consensus in a short time. Of course, outsiders didn't know their agreements.

"None of your business." Meng Shentian said: "Just hand over the grass and everything is negotiable. We might not even hurt you at all."

The spectators using their mirror became anxious. Some started to see the dawn, a chance for this storm to end.

"Then there must be other conditions?" Li Qiye wasn't surprised at all.

The group glanced at each other and Fengyun began:

“Gentlemen, if you don’t mind, I can act as the mediator. As long as Li Qiye hand the grass over, everyone won’t need to make it difficult for him. He just needs to make a small compensation instead.”

“That’s Ling Fengyun for you, worthy of his fame as a hero. He is so much more benevolent compared to others and really loves talents.” A few older characters praised him right away.

The discerning crowd could see that though the other five claimed to be here for revenge, their true goal was most likely the nine leaves.

Unlike the others, Ling Fengyun didn’t need the nine-leaves at his age. To a large extent, he was here to pay off his life debt to the Roaring Conch.

In a short time, the parties became quiet. Peace was indeed possible for them since their ultimate goal was the nine leaves. Obtaining justice for their juniors came after.

Of course, they would be glad to teach Li Qiye a lesson as well. However, Fengyun’s change of attitude as the mediator forced them to give him some face.

They might be more powerful than him but he was too young and vigorous. Thus, sensibilities were the right course of action.

Alas, they found it hard to accept if it was only a light punishment. After all, letting Li Qiye off easy would be damaging towards their prestige as well as their sects’ position.

Eventually, the five of them came to a tacit understanding after glancing at each other for a bit.

“We don’t need to pursue this any further.” In the end, Stygian said: “Outside of the nine leaves, Li Qiye need to hand over the method to cultivate the thirteen palaces. With that, all past feuds will be wiped out!”

“I have no objection to this.” Shen Mengtian smiled.

“I can also accept this.” Creek Bamboo nodded.

Dualchild and Driedtree agreed as well. Their purpose, in the beginning, was the leaves since they had no enmity against Li Qiye. Why would they say no for a chance of obtaining thirteen palaces?

Everyone held their breath before their mirror and felt that this was impossible. The thirteen palaces was a unique achievement. Li Qiye has broken all common sense to be the first in history with thirteen.

Just think about it, this was a merit law capable of creating thirteen palaces. Just how precious was it? It was even above Immortal Physique Laws. Perhaps all the laws in this world weren't as valuable as this one.

No one would surrender such a method due to its immeasurable value.

“Li Qiye won't agree for sure.” Experts who have seen him several times before murmured: “A fierce person like him would never submit or make compromises, let alone handing over something so precious.”

# Chapter 1516: Negotiation

---

Heaven Spirit was quiet before these conditions. They waited patiently for Li Qiye to answer and what choice he would make.

Li Qiye was still sitting up above. A moment later, he couldn't help smiling: "Hand over the nine leaves and the method for thirteen palaces?"

A thick smirk appeared on his face.

"Fellow Daoist Li, this is worth considering." Fengyun said: "Take one step back and bask in the immensity of the world. The grand dao is long with softness and hardness co-existing. Flexibility is the only way to reach the end."

Fengyun has called him Fellow Daoist at this point. It showed his high regards towards Li Qiye.

"If you are sincerely trying to help me, I can only say that I appreciate it." Li Qiye answered with a smile: "However, all of you aren't clear on the situation. The advantage lies on my side. I am in complete control so the one who should be spouting conditions is me, not you."

"I don't see your advantage anywhere." Driedtree uttered coldly.

"It's not your fault." Li Qiye said leisurely: "After all, you are limited to a narrow view, how could you see the immensity of the world as frogs under the well?"

"You!" The group was enraged instantly after being showed such disdain.

Though they had great self-restraint, they still had their pride for being the strongest in the nine worlds. Who wouldn't give them some respect? Plus, the six of them together could make all of Heaven Spirit tremble.

Now, a junior like Li Qiye treated them with contempt as if they

were worthless. It was difficult for them to remain calm. As the saying goes, even a clay Buddha would become angry at times!

“Fellow Daoist Li, an opportunity will never come back if you fail to seize it the first time.” Fengyun noticed his arrogance and said: “You are indeed strong enough but even if you have the advantages today, I don’t think you will be able to escape. Think carefully instead of following your emotion.”

To which Li Qiye responded: “I have always acted in a cautious manner, never clouded by emotions. But if you want me to make a choice, I will also give you a choice.”

Having said that, he stared at Fengyun and said: “You are a rare talent. If you submit and work for me, I will teach you a thing or two. It will be a lifetime of benefit!”

He then glanced towards the others: “As for the rest of you, there is no value to be found here. Too old with withered lifespan, only a bunch of people who are about to die. In terms of strength, not even at the Emperor Assailant level, completely useless. But I am a merciful person. Kill yourselves now and I shall spare your descendants and sects. Otherwise, I shall crush them as well!”

Jaws dropped to the ground before the heavenly mirrors. The world knew of Li Qiye’s unbridled aggressiveness but now, he wanted Fengyun to submit and for the other five to commit suicide lest their sects face destruction?

There were no words to describe this imperious showing. If it wasn’t for his previous illustrious exploits, others would consider him unbeatable right now... with regards to boasting.

Alas, those who have seen him in action didn’t feel this way at all. If this statement didn’t stem from arrogance and ignorance, just what kind of killer moves did he have up his sleeve to deal with these six invincible existences?

People couldn’t help but muse carefully. They couldn’t imagine

such a situation where he could kill all six. But judging by his demeanor, it was as if he was completely confident in carrying out this simple task.

Confusion was up in the air. No one knew what was left in his arsenal.

“Is he an emperor?” Someone murmured. Of course, they all knew that this was impossible because they would be aware if he has turned into one.

“Hahaha.” Dualchild burst out in laughter at this moment: “Crushing our sects? Is this a threat?”

He laughed boisterously and didn’t care at all because his sects have already declined.

Both his father’s imperial lineage and his treemother’s sect have deteriorated. In fact, he didn’t care for them either since his focus was on himself and life prolongment. He never gave a damn about the welfare of these sects.

“Go ahead and make your threats after you leave this place alive, that is.” Driedtree sneered.

Just like Dualchild, Driedtree didn’t give a damn. Despite rumors of him being a treefather reborn, his sect has been dead long ago so this wasn’t a threat to him.

In this place, only Shen Mengtian, Creek Bamboo, and the Stygian Monarch still had sects. Ling Fengyun himself wasn’t from the Roaring Conch.

“Destroy my sect?” Creek Bamboo sneered: “Just with you? Far from being qualified to say so!”

He said it with great confidence. His Ancestral Terra had three ancestral trees and was considered one of the strongest lineages in Heaven Spirit. It was also known as an impregnable location. Even emperors couldn’t break through it.

Just think about it, one ancestral tree was already strong enough. Now imagine three.

“Only the terra, can’t reach the apex. Nothing hard about destroying it.” Li Qiye smirked in response.

Creek Bamboo’s expression turned ugly. If he was younger, he would have pointed at Li Qiye and cursed. However, he was able to stay calm at his age and simply glared at him.

Fengyun simply sighed softly. He truly wanted to protect Li Qiye but his attitude was all too clear. There was no room for negotiation, only a fight to the death in this situation!

“Hah, anyone can brag.” Driedtree replied coldly: “Li Qiye, our patience is limited. Hand over the nine leaves or we’ll let you taste a fate worse than death!”

Driedtree has lost his patience. He was different from the others who also wanted the method for the thirteen palaces. His goal was much simpler, just the nine leaves.

Outside of not being able to say no to Dualchild, he needed the nine leaves as well. He actually wanted to seize the item alone with Dualchild. On the other hand, Shen Mengtian, Creek Bamboo, and Stygian had their own plans and calculations, some for the benefits of their sects.

However, Driedtree and Dualchild could be considered as being unrestrained. They could pay any price for the nine leaves including ambushing the others in order to monopolize the treasure.

“You alone first or everyone together?” Li Qiye stared at the impatient man and smiled.

This dismissive attitude further enraged Driedtree since he was a character who deterred the world before.

“Junior, you are strong indeed but if you think you can take all six of us alone, you think too highly of yourself.” Driedtree

sneered: “I alone am enough to teach you a lesson and show you the immensity of the heaven and earth!”

He knew Li Qiye was powerful but he was also confident in his own strength. Even if he couldn't kill this junior, he could still fight him for several thousand moves.

“Teach me a lesson?” Li Qiye heard his foe's aggressive reply and said: “You are only a leaf growing out of the dried tree. Do you actually think you are a reincarnated treefather? With your shallow abilities, not to mention teach me a lesson, you won't be able to last one move.”

“One move...” Driedtree was slightly stunned. He thought he has misheard the guy.

# Chapter 1517: One Move

---

“Yes, just one move to end you.” Li Qiye chuckled and slowly reached out with one finger.

Driedtree heard it clearly this time and was stunned to see the incoming finger strike.

The rest of the group was astounded as well. Even invincible characters like them were slack-jawed and thought they had misheard him.

However, they understood that this was no mistake since Li Qiye has indeed raised his finger. It was indeed one move!

“Impossible!” Both the experts watching from their mirrors and the masters actually present by the cliff blurted out after confirming Li Qiye’s intention.

They simply refused to accept that he was going to use one move against Divine Ancestor Driedtree. This must be a daydream; maybe it was possible for an emperor, but definitely not a junior like Li Qiye.

Driedtree thought he was insane and reiterated: “You are certain that you can slay me with one move?”

“Yes, just one to kill you.” Li Qiye firmly answered with a carefree smile.

One more confirmation let the crowd know that Li Qiye was serious.

Shortly after, the world was void of sound. Even his opponents were completely speechless since they shared the same sentiments as the spectators. However, Li Qiye seemed so sure of himself.

“Hahaha!” Driedtree was livid and laughed: “One move to kill me? Hahaha, this is the most arrogant thing I’ve ever heard in my life. Who do you think you are?! Killing me with one move!”

He went insane from anger and wanted nothing more than to annihilate this foe before him. He could restrain the disdainful act from Li Qiye earlier since he had to maintain his style as a master; there was no need to be picky towards a junior or it would harm his image.

But now, his fury ran wild. Remember that he was considered an Emperor Assailant, one of the strongest characters in Heaven Spirit. However, a junior just claimed that he could beat him in just one move. Being treated like an ant by a junior — this was beyond his tolerance. Thus, laughing was the only response he had from being too furious.

“I am Li Qiye who will kill you in one move. I hope you can remember my name before death.” Li Qiye nonchalantly smiled.

These words came easily, but no other statement could be more domineering and shocking!

Driedtree stopped laughing because he realized that Li Qiye wasn't joking around.

The rest of the group was stirred as well. Could Li Qiye really take down Driedtree in just one move?

He coldly uttered: “Junior, no one can do so outside of Immortal Emperors, and it has to be a move empowered by the Heaven's Will. That might be able to take me down in one move. Even their ordinary attacks can't do so.”

It wasn't an unreasonable statement because even if he wasn't a real Emperor Assailant, a casual attack from an emperor shouldn't be able to take him down.

In fact, the people present weren't real assailants. At the very least, their cultivation and personal strength weren't at this level. For example, Driedtree was quite powerful, but he had some fatal flaws. This was the reason why he couldn't become a treefather.

As for Stygian, if he used his progenitor's weapon, he could fight

against an emperor for one to two hundred moves. However, his own abilities alone wouldn't allow him to do so at all.

Ling Fengyun was the most powerful here. His cultivation was at the Legendary Godking level. Alas, his grand dao was imperfect and incomplete — this was his weakness.

Nevertheless, rumor has it that he didn't borrow any external power and still fought against Immortal Emperor Hao Hai for several hundred moves. Thus, his power was widely recognized.

Outsiders might think that Stygian and his group were Emperor Assailants, but the real masters looked down on their title. In their eyes, Stygian's group was not qualified to be considered assailants.

Ling Fengyun was the only exception. Even if he was a bit weaker than real assailants, he came from a small sect and reached his current level with his own unyielding determination. Thus, the real masters recognized his achievements.

All in all, even if Driedtree wasn't a real assailant, he simply didn't believe that Li Qiye could take him down in one move since even emperors couldn't do so.

“You only have the power of a Nine Worlds' Godking, yet you think you're a real assailant?” Li Qiye chuckled and lightly said: “Even with the treefather's seal from birth that empowers you, allowing you to be a little stronger than an ordinary Nine Worlds' Godking, you're still only a Nine Worlds' Godking. Since you're not even a Legendary Godking, one move is more than enough.”

“What's a Legendary Godking?” Many juniors have never heard of this title before, so they had to ask their ancestors.

“A peak Godking.” The oldest ancestor of a sect put on a solemn expression: “Legend states that this is the real realm to be an Emperor Assailant. People do say that long ago, Ling Fengyun became a Legendary Godking. Who knows if this is true or not?”

Driedtree shouted: “Even if I'm not a Legendary Godking, I can

still take you on.”

Driedtree didn't know where to put his old face after Li Qiye revealed his background. For people of their level, being called an Emperor Assailant was a supreme glory.

Everyone in the world knew that Immortal Emperors were untouchable. Being able to assail one was a great achievement. Even losing to them after a confrontation was prestigious. This was enough for the world to sing praises about them for a generation.

Although he has never fought with an emperor before, this title gave him glee and glory. However, this source of pride of his was trampled upon by Li Qiye's spiel. How could he not become angry?

“Come, one move.” Li Qiye ignored his face and casually smiled.

“Good, good! I want to see how you will kill me in one move!” Driedtree laughed maniacally.

However, before he went out to fight, Dualchild immediately pulled him back: “Brother, wait or you'll fall for his little trap.”

“You think too highly of yourselves. There's no need for me to resort to traps to deal with your group.” Li Qiye countered with a grin.

Dualchild was still calm and stared at Li Qiye: “Li Qiye, do you dare to make a bet? What if you can't kill Brother Driedtree?”

Driedtree immediately regained his wits after being stopped by Dualchild. He sneered and said: “That's right. Junior, what will you do?”

“Looks like you want to be tricky.” Li Qiye smiled: “Don't you want the nine leaves? Fine, if I can't kill you in one move, the leaves shall be yours!”

Driedtree loudly emphasized: “Really now?!”

Li Qiye's opponents couldn't believe it. They didn't think he

could kill Driedtree at all so they had no problem letting him try. Plus, this was a chance for them to use Driedtree in order to see Li Qiye's real killing moves.

“I will do as I say.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Don't worry. If I can't kill you, not just one leaf but the entire thing will be yours.”

Everyone was slightly moved, including Dualchild since he was also here for the leaves. He even wanted to participate in this bet, but since Driedtree was first in line, he wasn't in a position to contend with him.

“Okay, you said it.” Driedtree suddenly became excited. In his mind, he could obtain the grass with Li Qiye's failure — this was completely worth it. Ultimately, this is predicated on him being confident that Li Qiye wouldn't be able to kill him in one move!

# Chapter 1518: Dao Decapitation

---

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Don’t worry, how can I renege in front of so many people? If I can’t kill you, the leaves will be yours.”

Such confidence made the others bat their eyes. This had great significance and Li Qiye couldn’t refuse because it would be a stain in his life.

This meant that he was actually confident about carrying out the unbelievable task of slaying Driedtree in one blow.

This made the others feel quite uneasy because it meant that they wouldn’t be a match for Li Qiye. In just a short period of time, the group’s confidence sank.

“Okay, I’ll have a taste of what you can do.” Driedtree crazily laughed and stepped out. In his eyes, he simply didn’t believe in this crap, not even if someone beat him to death. An emperor could do so, but Li Qiye was no emperor!

“Brother Driedtree, you can do it. I’m waiting for your victory!” Dualchild instantly cheered for him.

In his mind, it was a hundred times better for Driedtree to get the leaves compared to the other people here. After all, they had a deep friendship, so he could benefit from this as well.

“Boom!” Driedtree released his energy. Despite being on the verge of death, someone at his level was still frightening even with just one drop of longevity blood left.

His one drop was enough to match the full energy of many cultivators.

As the ancestor channeled his own longevity blood, a terrifying storm swept through the world. His eyes erupted with a horrifying light. In this split second, his pupils turned into the eye of storms. His glare could destroy everything in the world, a power of countless stars exploding.

At the same time, countless dao laws rose from his body. Each of them resembled a heavenly vein. They surged into the sky as if wanting to break the firmament. Even the stars seemed tiny before them. He was no longer an ordinary old man as his common aura has been extinguished.

He looked just like a deity standing proudly in the sky with the power to reverse the universe. A single gesture from him could take down the stars, refine the Yin and Yang, and sever the samsara cycle!

This was the real him, an appearance befitting of the words “Divine Ancestor”. His ordinary looks and aura earlier were only a disguise.

“This is his real strength.” Even those watching from their mirrors could sense the ancestor dominating the world.

Even the real masters watching nearby nodded their heads approvingly.

“Driedtree isn’t just in name.” Some invincible characters admitted this.

His claim of being an Emperor Assailant was indeed a bit far reaching since he hadn’t reached that level, but one couldn’t deny that he was quite mighty.

“Clank! Clank! Clank!” His dao laws wove together. In the next moment, a boundless lifeforce poured down. The Broken God Cliff that was deserted and lifeless was suddenly revitalized as if spring was returning.

At this time, a tree appeared before him. It seemed to be made from silver while giving off an ancient feel. Its branches were rotating and emitted an untouchable atmosphere. It was as if this divine tree had the most sacred force in this world.

Driedtree disappeared at this moment. His body turned into an invincible figure like a treefather. It emitted a boundless green

brilliance. Not only could he borrow the strength of a treefather, he could also use the power from the treants' legendary progenitors.

Everyone could feel the life exuding from his body regardless of where they were in the world. The treant experts could feel a resonance with this particular form of Driedtree.

“That’s a treefather?” Many treants felt an urge to worship as they became dazed.

“No.” An ancestor emotionally sighed: “This is the seal of a treefather, Driedtree’s most precious item and the reason why he can wield this power.”

The nearby masters held their breaths because no one should be able to kill him in just one move when he is empowered like this. At least, no one in Heaven Spirit.

Driedtree has shown his strongest state. Despite not being the reincarnation of a treefather and lacking resources from a treefather’s sect or an imperial lineage, he was born from a withered ancestral tree so he had its seal that grants him part of a treefather’s power.

Despite having a minuscule amount of this power, it was still enough for him to rampage across the world.

“Junior, it’s your turn. I want to see what you can do.” Driedtree spoke in his treefather form. His words resembled immortal hymns. Trees and vegetation actually started growing on the cliff. Fruits and flowers started to grow as well.

His words alone turned this place into an oasis. This was the wondrous power of a treefather.

This scene made many experts gasp. They finally saw the potential of a treefather at this moment.

“Get ready! Just one move!” Li Qiye was still all-smiles against this particular form.

“Whoosh!” The thirteen palaces that were suppressing Heaven Spirit emitted an endless golden light. It permeated across every nook and corner of the world.

The Seven Martial Pavilion back in the Dragon Demon Sea, the Golden Isle back in the Jade Sea, and Gu Chun’s four branches in the Abyss Sea... All of these spaces in the world were saturated by this light.

“Bang!” In this split second, the vessels of life, genesis, and athanasia appeared above his head.

Bursts of explosions detonated. The vessel of life poured out enough blood energy to overfill Heaven Spirit. The vessel of genesis seemed to be opening a new world inside by destroying Heaven Spirit first. Lastly, the vessel of athanasia exuded an eternal power that exceeded time itself. The mysterious legendary era suddenly came to the present with its everlasting and never-changing force!

“This is Li Qiye’s real strength!” The world was shocked by the vessels.

Even the real masters here turned silly. The power of thirteen palaces combined with the three vessels have exceeded their imagination.

“Clang.” The Dao Sword was in his hand. It was pitch black as if it was the dao itself.

It vibrated just when Li Qiye attacked with a Resplendent Break.

“Boom!” All of his blood energy and the power of both the thirteen palaces and three vessels gathered in this Resplendent Break. They crazily empowered the Dao Sword.

“Clank!” One slash came out without any technique or variation. It also lacked the power of the grand dao and laws since it was only a simple slash.

Simple and direct, nothing else was present. However, it was so

natural that resistance was futile. Under this one slash, gods and ants and even the world and time itself would be split into two!

One cut, two halves — it was that simple. This was the natural order of the world and completely impossible to thwart. The result was already determined regardless of what existence his foe may be.

A skull sprung up high before rolling on the ground...

# Chapter 1519: One Strike Jolting The Nine Heavens

---

Divine Ancestor Driedtree's head rolled on the ground with his eyes wide open. It was still blinking during the rolling process.

Even at the moment of death, he didn't understand what transpired. He had some power from a treefather, yet he couldn't resist the slash at all from decapitating him.

It was confusion about the sword's power. It cut down everything of his; his vitality, power, and cultivation.

There were too many questions at the moment of his demise, an end without closure.

“Poof!” When his eyes closed, the severed neck finally squirted out blood up high like a spring as the headless body fell straight down.

In the next second, Heaven Spirit fell into a deathly silence. All existences felt suffocated. Even the strongest experts and Nine Worlds' Godkings felt as if they were being strangled. They couldn't move or resist at all.

Dao Decapitation, the ultimate attack of the Dao Sword! It was prohibitively difficult to unleash this move. Perhaps this was a privilege for an Immortal Emperor after exerting all of their power.

Even Li Qiye was greatly affected after using this attack. His blood energy was exhausted, so he turned pale.

Without the thirteen palaces and three vessels supporting him, even his Resplendent Break couldn't unleash the Dao Decapitation!

In his mind, using an Imperial Massacre and Heavenly Annihilation wasn't overly difficult. However, for a weapon like the Dao Sword, its ultimate attack was harder to activate than

reaching the heavens!

Everyone was robbed of their voice and breath. Just a second ago, they were skeptical about his claim. Such a battle achievement would go down in history, something completely comparable to those of emperors. It simply couldn't happen.

But now, it was the reality. Li Qiye has decapitated Driedtree with just one move and deterred everyone in the world.

“Thump, thump, thump.” Shen Mengtian, Creek Bamboo, and Dualchild all took several steps back in a daze.

In fact, the masters outside of the cliff were jolted backward as well.

These characters have experienced countless storms. They have met emperors, and a few have even trained emperors before. There was nothing in life that could scare them. But at this moment, they felt a sense of dread. It was real and lingered in their minds.

After making a name for themselves, they have long forgotten about fear and thought that they were the masters of their own destiny outside of dying from old age!

But today, the long forgotten feeling has returned because of Li Qiye.

“Oh mother...” Many were scared out of their minds in front of their mirrors and dropped butt first to the ground. They were paralyzed completely, and some almost pissed in their pants!

Those who wanted to oppose Li Qiye were even more scared. After today, he would forever become their shadow. In the future, they might not even have the courage to stand straight before him and would have to kneel upon his sight.

A master outside of the cliff murmured: “Hey, what is that move?”

No one knew what kind of slash it was or where it came from, not

even someone like Ling Fengyun.

“Man, the most insightful thing I have done in my life is to not mess with Li Qiye.” An ancestor was aghast while watching from his mirror.

“That’s it? Too weak.” Li Qiye put away the Dao Sword and smiled: “Just a treefather’s seal, not the source itself.”

Driedtree was strong indeed. It was a shame that he only had a portion of a treefather’s power so it wasn’t sufficient.

After calming down, Dualchild exclaimed: “An ultimate attack!” Due to his upbringing, he was knowledgeable and understood what was going on right away.

“Rumble!” He seemed to have turned crazy and took out all of his weapons including an Immortal Emperor True Treasure.

He didn’t mind exerting all of his blood energy on these weapons. The true treasure woke up and a majestic figure came out.

Imperial auras assaulted this world and made Heaven Spirit tremble.

In this world, there weren’t that many people who could wake up these weapons, especially a true one.

However, as the child of an emperor, it was much easier for him to wake up his father’s weapons.

“Boom!” Ling Fengyun and the others quickly released their invincible weapons as well.

Shen Mengtian’s divine reflection appeared with an antique item floating inside. No one knows what it was, but its aura could collapse the heavens.

Ling Fengyun didn’t have an imperial weapon, but with the wave of his hand, many sea god weapons from the Roaring Conch flew out. Shortly after, these weapons floated around him and acted as protection.

As for Creek Bamboo, many weapons left behind by treefathers poured out their endless life force and sealed the space around him.

At the same time, Stygian unleashed his ancestral item as well. This thing was surrounded by primordial energy, but it could still scare gods!

In just a split second, these people understood that regardless of how powerful and untouchable they might be, they couldn't block Li Qiye's sword with their bodies. Perhaps even their weapons wouldn't be able to do so outside of the imperial ones.

Because of this, they created powerful barriers with their weapons. Even if Li Qiye wanted to kill them, he must go through these divine weapons first.

An imperial weapon could perhaps be destroyed, but several of them could definitely outlast a single attack. This was especially true for a true treasure that would never go down to one blow.

Despite making ample preparations, the group was still pale and shuddering on the inside.

"All at once or one at a time to tire me out?" Li Qiye smiled at the group.

Everyone watched with bated breaths. Li Qiye's slash earlier has deterred Shen Mengtian's group and made them feel fear.

They glanced at each other and found themselves riding a tiger. There was no chance to get off.

If they were to run without a fight, their reputation would be wiped out. It took blood and sweat to build up the prestige and status they had today. Thus, if they didn't have the courage to fight against a junior, there was no way they could show their faces again in the future. They would forever live in a shadow. If they couldn't defeat their inner demon, there was no point in seeing the world again.

However, they felt incapable in a direct confrontation, that they

were not a match for Li Qiye.

Ling Fengyun finally understood why Li Qiye said he was the master of the situation. They weren't qualified to make any conditions at all!

"It's just a battle!" Fengyun took a deep breath and slowly uttered: "A cultivator always chases the unending limit! Dying in battle is also the fate of a cultivator!"

He didn't wish to run and lose his lifelong fame.

Shen Mengtian's eyes lit up as he stared at Li Qiye's pale face and informed the others: "His blood energy is depleted, we should team up and fight."

They perused his countenance as well and could see that the sword slash earlier has expended a lot of his power.

Under ordinary circumstances, this group had no problems with fighting. Alas, after what they have just witnessed, they still hesitated even though Li Qiye was in a weakened state.

# Chapter 1520: The Battle Begins

---

Li Qiye was quite amused. He stared at the group that had no room to advance or retreat: “What now? Where did your domineering attitude go? Weren’t you certain of victory earlier and wanted to give conditions? Why is everyone shrinking their heads into their shells? Do you want to become turtles?”

The group’s expression turned unsightly after hearing the degradation, but they knew that he was egging them on. Alas, there was no other way but to fight since they didn’t want to lose their prestige.

Stygian Monarch shouted: “Junior, stop acting arrogantly. The victor has yet to be decided!”

Li Qiye leisurely stared at them and smiled: “Then come. Even if all five of you fight together, I’ll still slaughter you all!”

In the past, whoever said such words would be considered a madman. However, it was quite awe-inspiring now that it came from Li Qiye. The experts watching from their mirrors felt their hair standing on end.

The five experts glanced at each other and instantly came to an agreement. They were on the same side so regardless of whatever plans they had in the past, they must work together now in order to leave this place alive.

Creek Bamboo roared: “Go!” Despite being an old man with a childlike face, when he wanted to fight, his battle intent became quite mighty as if he was a giant.

“Boom!” The experts that followed him along released all of their vitality. Creek Bamboo’s vitality fused together with them and then it all came pouring inside his body.

With another blast, Stygian’s cavalry channeled their energy as well and fused with his own.

Shen Mengtian's group also gave him their vitality.

In a short period of time, these three borrowed energy from their legions and seemed to be several thousand years younger. They looked spirited and ready to fight. Their eyes lit up while their bodies were brimming with energy.

“Borrowing vitality.” Many ancestors emotionally sighed with envy.

This was impossible for many of them. Training these legions was too expensive. Not just any sect could have so many resources to waste.

For those near their death, this was the only way for them to fight. They could only borrow their juniors' vitality because their life wheel has withered. Even if they could devour the vitality and longevity blood of others, it couldn't replenish their own bodies. These things would quickly wither away as well.

Only in a young body would blood energy multiply and become more powerful. The near dead didn't have this privilege.

Ling Fengyun and Dualchild didn't need to borrow blood from anyone. Fengyun was still young and vigorous and in the middle of his prime. Because of this, when he released his energy, it was majestic and almost caused the sky vault to explode.

Dualchild was at a disadvantage in this regard. He was decrepit and on the verge of death on top of not having juniors to borrow energy.

Luckily, he inherited his father's weapons. Because of this, he could exert more of their power compared to others while spending less energy.

“Rumble!” The entire Heaven Spirit World lost its light. Weapons soared to the sky as the group activated their strongest merit laws in order to deal a fatal blow.

“Kill him!” They lunged for him in unison.

Earthquakes assaulted the world. Even experts far away were suffocated by their terrifying might.

Just think about it. Five invincible masters have just used their strongest merit laws at the same time. This was an assault that could take down Heaven Spirit itself.

“Not bad.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled in the face of this.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” He disappeared and five invincible characters suddenly came out from where he was.

Shen Mengtian, Ling Fengyun, Creek Bamboo Immortal, Imperial Dualchild, and Stygian Monarch — there was suddenly a perfect copy of each of them.

“Boom!” The ten began their skirmish. Each of them fought their copy with their strongest attacks. Space was rendered to ashes. Soon after, the numerous boulders by this cliff were destroyed. Even the laws of this cliff themselves weren’t spared!

Each blow caused the stars in the sky to howl. Some of them even fell down. The power of this exchange was too much.

After the first bout, the five opponents stared straight at their copies and were quite helpless.

Parallel Space, a technique from Parallelism, one of the four great arts of the Space Scripture.

The spectators were shocked to see the five having to face themselves. There seemed to be no good way to deal with this.

Shen Mengtian shouted: “Let’s switch.”

In a split second, he swapped with Ling Fengyun. Ling Fengyun swapped with Creek Bamboo and Creek Bamboo swapped with Dualchild.

However, when they swapped their position, the space around them shifted as well. The five copies also made the necessary changes.

In the end, they still had to face themselves within the special spaces.

Not to mention the experts watching from their mirrors, even the masters right outside the cliff had no response to this type of spatial manipulation.

“If such a trick can break my Parallel Space, it wouldn’t be so special.” Li Qiye appeared at a different spot and casually laughed.

If this technique could be dealt with so easily, the Space Scripture wouldn’t live up to its fame.

“Die!” The group launched an attack at Li Qiye. They understood that the only way to make this spatial manipulation disappear was to kill him.

“Boom!” However, when they aimed for Li Qiye, their copies duplicated the same attacks towards them.

“Rumble!” The two sides collided, causing the sky to quake and the sun and moon to lose their color. Countless existences in Heaven Spirit quivered in fear. The murderous intent from a battle of this magnitude engulfed the entire world.

This seemed like the apocalypse to all creatures. The fish dove deeper into the ocean while the birds hid in their nests. Dread overwhelmed them completely.

“Activate!” As the battle was heating up, Dualchild crazily howled. He unleashed an ultimate attack from his true treasure. This might not be at the level of a Heavenly Annihilation, but it was infinitely close.

Even though Dualchild’s copy also replicated the same ultimate attack, it actually lost in this exchange and had to take several steps back.

In this split second, Dualchild understood right away and shouted: “Use your weapons’ ultimate attacks, they can’t replicate a true treasure’s full power!”

With that, the other four quickly unleashed their weapons' strongest moves. The auras of treefathers, sea gods, and Immortal Emperors rampaged across Heaven Spirit. It was as if these beings were coming back to life and wanted to destroy Heaven Spirit to return it to its original form.

# Chapter 1521: Unbeatable

---

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The group used their invincible weapons to unleash the ultimate blows.

They finally managed to suppress their copy with the help of these weapons. However, their advantage was still minimal after the attack.

Dualchild had the clearest result because he didn't only have life treasures but also a true treasure. The true treasure allowed him to suppress his copy since it was far more powerful than treefather and sea god's weapons.

“Brother Dualchild, unleash a Heavenly Annihilation. We'll repay you later.” The group noticed this and Stygian immediately shouted.

“Please, brother, we'll pay you back handsomely after this mess.” Creek Bamboo added.

“Very well!” Dualchild didn't refuse and crazily roared. He didn't try to hide anything at this moment since he was on the same boat as the others. If they were to die, he wouldn't be able to escape Li Qiye either.

“Boom!” He didn't mind wasting what's little left of his longevity blood and channeled a Heavenly Annihilation with his true treasure.

“Boom!” Everything became ashes; all laws shattered into little pieces before this annihilation.

Meanwhile, his copy also used a Heavenly Annihilation that robbed the world of its colors and dao.

One-third of Broken God Cliff turned to smoke after this particular blow. Words couldn't describe the power of two Heavenly Annihilations.

Many dropped straight to the ground, including Virtuous Paragons. They couldn't stand up either and were completely breathless.

Finally, the copy of Dualchild was blown flying and broke many boulders along the way.

“Die!” After escaping his copy, Dualchild shouted and took advantage of this rare opportunity by attacking directly at Li Qiye. Though he couldn't use another Heavenly Annihilation, this next attack from a true treasure could turn the void into nothingness.

At this time, Li Qiye's blood energy was restored by around seventy to eighty percent. He saw Dualchild coming and laughed: “How could the light of a firefly compare to the moon!” With that, he used his World Seal.

“Buzz!” The moment the World Seal appeared, an old tree emerged at the same time. It wasn't overly large but it seemed to be rooted in the world.

“Boom!” Multiple immortal rays opened behind its back just like a peacock spreading its tail.

This old tree and its brilliance stopped Dualchild's attack. The brilliance then swept downward just like a fan.

Dualchild was shocked and immediately used his weapons for protection. However, he was still blown flying and spurted blood!

“What is that?” Many people raised their eyes to see Dualchild still being swept away under his weapons' protection by this fan.

“Isn't, isn't that the Peacock Tree?” Just a moment later, someone finally recognized the old tree and exclaimed.

“The Peacock Tree? That's impossible, isn't it still at the Peacock Land right now? How did it get here, plus, after an ancestral tree takes roots with the earth, it can't leave anymore.” Many people were astonished at recognizing it.

“Look over at the Peacock Land.” One ancestor ordered right away. They changed the direction of their heavenly mirror.

However, the mirror showed that the Peacock Tree was still growing on its territory. Alas, the Peacock Tree back at the Broken God Cliff was completely identical as well.

“Two Peacock Trees, what is going on?” People became quite confused. An identical tree came out of nowhere; even the masters couldn’t tell which one was real or not outside of their location.

The five copies earlier of the masters were already shocking enough. This addition only added to the crowd’s astonishment.

“Is this a dao avatar of the Peacock Tree?” One expert wondered.

“I don’t think so.” A treant ancestor replied: “Once an ancestral tree takes root, it is just that. No dao avatar is available.”

Of course, people didn’t know that this was the amazing property of the World Seal. After curing the tree, Li Qiye has garnered its agreement so he made a mark of the tree with his World Seal.

This meant that he could summon it to fight for him wherever. There was still a disparity between this copy and the real thing. After all, Peacock was an ancestral tree. Nevertheless, this copy was still stronger than an Immortal Emperor True Treasure so Dualchild was still blown away despite having a true treasure’s protection.

“Stop, don’t attack anymore.” At this time, Fengyun shouted while looking at the Peacock Tree in the sky with a grave expression.

The group immediately stopped and their copies stopped as well. This was the weakness of Parallel Space. If one were to stop fighting or run, the copies would stop.

Of course, this clear weakness isn’t present in the higher level technique, Parallel Displacement.

The group stopped cautiously and stared at their copy. They slowly retreated and maintained a sufficient gap. At this time, they didn't dare to act recklessly at all. Though the copies wouldn't attack them, their expression wasn't good either since they were staring at the Peacock Tree in the sky.

“Okay, warm up is over. Time to take it up a notch.” Li Qiye smiled after seeing the group stopping their attack. He recalled Parallel Space and the five copies disappeared instantly.

At this time, his foes had nothing to say. Even a Legendary Godking like Ling Fengyun remained quiet. They understood that they were in a precarious situation today. Li Qiye could casually take out methods to suppress them like this so his killing move might end with their doom.

They felt a tinge of regrets. If they knew he was so terrible, they wouldn't have crawled out at all. It was better to obediently tuck their tail between their legs back in their cave.

Alas, it was useless now. The feud knot has been tied; they were arrows that have shot from the bow. There was no coming back.

The quiet spectators everywhere had no ways of solving this circumstance either. Li Qiye had the absolute upper hand. What other methods could anyone use to subdue him?

Even the invincible characters mused back and forth. The only way was to prostrate and beg for forgiveness and mercy. Other than that, there was nothing else the group of five could do to leave the Broken God Cliff alive.

“What else is Li Qiye capable of?” The masters outside the cliff were creeped out by his ability to summon another Peacock Tree.

At the same time, many existences were drowned in fear while others celebrated the fact that they weren't his enemies. This was when everyone realized that Li Qiye was still holding back when dealing with Meng Zhentian's group.

“How do you all want to die?” Li Qiye smirked while staring at his foes and their stoic demeanor.

Shen Mengtian and the others were silent. They had the courage to fight a bit earlier but that was gone now. Alas, it was impossible for them to beg for forgiveness. Giving up their pride was even more painful than dying!

# Chapter 1522: Ling Fengyuns Power

---

Li Qiye laughed at his silent foes and said: “Unfortunately, it is already too late. It depends on your own abilities if you will live now or the true resources of your sect.”

Having said that, immortal rays swept down from the Peacock Tree. Time seemed to have stopped completely with their coming.

“Activate!” The group all took action at the same time and used their weapons’ ultimate attacks.

They wanted to disperse the tree’s power and shatter the temporal stagnation.

“Rumble!” Even these weapons failed to stop the descending immortal rays. All were blown away while vomiting blood.

Everyone in Heaven Spirit gasped at this sight. Even these so-called assailants couldn’t withstand the attack.

“Unfortunately, you’re not real assailants.” Li Qiye laughed at them again.

In a short time, they all turned pale. This was the power of a treefather so there was a great disparity. Moreover, they have just fought earlier so their blood energy has been depleted.

Ling Fengyun was doing better than the rest so he was only pushed backward and weren’t injured, unlike the rest.

When a treefather returned to the void and the earth to become an ancestral tree, it was one with the world. Even emperors would have a hard time affecting it so needless to say more about this group. If they were real assailants, they could probably escape from the Peacock Tree. Alas, their title was in name only.

“Brace the attack and find an opening!” Fengyun shouted at the group.

He put on a stoic expression. This would be the second toughest

fight of his life. The first was, of course, the bout with Immortal Emperor Hao Hai.

“Boom!” He roared crazily. His vitality surged like a waterfall and at the same time, he used his longevity blood to wake up the sea gods’ weapons around him.

An immortal light also oozed out of his body in the form of rays. They came together to form a wondrous flame with the appearance of a pair of wings supporting him.

He looked like a giant at this moment as if he was capable of shouldering the world. At this point, he didn’t care for anything else. If he didn’t go all out right now, there was no chance of leaving this place alive today.

“Come, show me how strong you really are!” With an engulfing aura, he was much more powerful and ferocious compared to his allies. His domineering presence had no bounds; this was the temperament of an Emperor Assailant.

Once again, he wasn’t a real one but many accepted his title and achievements including the peak existences.

“This is Ling Fengyun’s true power. Just his cultivation alone could probably take on two Stygian Monarchs!” Even the masters outside of the cliff said with emotions.

“I heard you borrowed an Immortal Emperor True Treasure from the Gu Chun’s four branches to fight against Immortal Emperor Hao Hai back then. Unfortunately, you won’t be so lucky today. Plus, I’m not the emperor. He didn’t use his true fate weapon because he appreciated your talents and achievements so you were able to make it to two hundred moves. I’m afraid your death is certain today though.”

Alas, Li Qiye paused for a bit before making a proposal: “Like you have said before about your love for talents, I have it as well. Submit to me and not only will I spare you life, I will show you the

way so that you can become a true Emperor Assailant.”

Everyone in the world was stunned after hearing this. There was no doubt that Li Qiye wouldn't spare the others but he was willing to spare Ling Fengyun. They all waited for Fengyun's answer with bated breath.

“I shall fight to the end even when knowing death is on the horizon. I didn't die to an Immortal Emperor but dying to a genius with thirteen palaces won't besmirch my life at all.” Fengyun laughed heroically with a rising momentum and spirit.

He has realized something and was ready to go all out with no fear of death in battle today!

In his eyes, the outcome of this fierce battle might not be as favorable as the one with Immortal Emperor Hao Hai.

In the past, he made perfect preparation to fight the emperor and even borrowed a true treasure from the four branches in order to exert his strongest battle potential. Moreover, that was the year when he was at his highest state in dao enlightenment and vitality.

But as Li Qiye has said, the emperor didn't have his true fate weapon, only his bare hands. Ling Fengyun managed to endure two hundred moves before losing to the emperor. However, the emperor didn't choose to kill him.

He paid a great price because of this battle. Not only did he consumed a monstrous amount of blood energy, he also expended a shocking portion of his lifespan near the point of depletion.

These injuries didn't heal until a long time after he sealed himself for recovery.

“Commendable courage.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “So be it, have your wish.”

With that, the immortal rays from the Peacock Tree went straight at Ling Fenyun with considerable pressure.

“Open!” With his cry, the sea gods’ weapons came back to life. Two majestic figures emerged; they were the intents of the Roaring Conch’s two sea gods.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Both figures entered Fengyun’s body, making it grow even larger. He looked just like an avatar with sea gods’ laws circulating around him. In the blink of an eye, he assumed the appearance of a sea god that could soar above the nine heavens!

“Bang!” Fengyun has finally made his move by raising both hands to the sky to stop the incoming immortal rays.

“Rumble!” The entire world shook as if his palms were actually shaking it. He was able to shoulder this immense mass and the immortal rays from the Peacock Tree due to his own power and the help of the sea gods’ weapons.

“So strong!” Many cultivators were stunned after seeing this.

“That’s Ling Fengyun for you, still someone who could fight against an emperor.” The masters present were astonished by his power.

Creek Bamboo had two treefathers from his branch and Shen Mengtian was called a teacher because some emperors have asked him questions before. However, in terms of cultivation, the two of them didn’t live up to their fame.

In fact, these two and even Stygian who has fought all over the nine worlds have never fought against an emperor. They might have contended against a young emperor before ascension but not against one with a Heaven’s Will.

On the contrary, the youngest among them, Ling Fengyun, has fought against a real emperor before, one of the most brilliant ones at that.

“Very strong indeed.” Li Qiye smiled at this spectacle: “Unfortunately, you lack the might in the past since you haven’t

recovered fully.”

With that, the Peacock Tree became even brighter with more rays descending down. They completely suppressed Fengyun’s body this time around.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Fengyun struggled this time because the Peacock Tree has exuded its origin power. It wasn’t only coming from the tree itself but from the earth itself.

This copy from the World Seal might be inferior to the real thing but it was much stronger than an avatar type of technique. It could exert at least fifty to sixty percent of the real tree. If Li Qiye went all out, it might even reach seventy percent.

Thus, it was easy to imagine that regardless of how strong Fengyun might be, he couldn’t withstand it any longer.

# Chapter 1523: Escape

---

Fengyun's body was twisting under the suppressive immortal rays. People could even hear his bones creaking as if his entire frame was about to be crushed.

The rest of the group glanced at each other before shouting: "Brother Fengyun, we're coming!"

Shen Mengtian, Creek Bamboo Immortal, Stygian Monarch, and Imperial Dualchild all rushed forward with their divine weapons.

"Rumble!" They gathered all of their power together into the mightiest wave to stop the incoming rays.

Their blood energies have turned into fiery wings as well after borrowing their legions' vitality. Due to their teamwork and the invincible weapons, they actually managed to stop the Peacock Tree's suppression.

They didn't lend their assistance out of comradery, it was because they were on the same side. Their deaths would be next after Ling Fengyun falls.

"Boom!" Heaven Spirit itself had difficulty breathing under the blinding suppression of the tree. The five of them struggled to hold on; if this course continued, they wouldn't last much longer.

"A little capable." Li Qiye wasn't in a hurry to end this after seeing the group manage to resist a bit longer.

Although Dualchild's group tried their best with their divine weapons and could stop the immortal rays, they couldn't retaliate at all. Their vitality was gradually depleting.

This was the aspect where they were much inferior to Ling Fengyun. He could last much longer due to his vigorous constitution.

Even when they borrowed the blood energy of their legions, it

still only belonged to a group of juniors with weaker cultivations. This only acted as a temporary form of replenishment and couldn't let them fight a prolonged battle.

They were still safe and sound, but the group was actually suffering and turned pale. If this continued, their borrowed vitality would deplete in a short time.

Creek Bamboo hastily communicated with the others: "Brothers, we must run!"

"How?" Dualchild replied: "It's not just the Peacock Tree. Once we try to run, Li Qiye will seal the area!"

They knew now that Li Qiye hasn't used his full power. This Peacock Tree was only part of his arsenal, yet it was already enough to leave them helpless. Once they tried to run, he would use even more means to kill them.

Creek Bamboo gravely responded: "I have a backup plan from the Ancestral Terra, but I need Brother Shen's divine reflection and your treasure, Brother Stygian."

The two were moved after hearing this. Shen Mengtian didn't use his reflection fully just yet while the monarch was using a different weapon and not the ancient weapon from the Spirit Abyss.

"Okay, Brother, go for it. We know what to do." The three of them reached an agreement.

Creek Bamboo emphasized: "We must pay a heavy price to leave this place alive."

The other two's eyes darted at each other. They understood what this heavy price meant.

"Just do it. As long as we can live, there is still a future." Stygian nodded solemnly.

"Boom!" Creek Bamboo's body shot out a bloody light. A supreme

law was created within just like an all-devouring vortex.

“Ahh!” Screams echoed left and right. The experts who came here with Creek Bamboo began to break down. All of their essences were devoured by him.

“Ah!” More cries of anguish came about. Both the legions from the Dream Empyrean and the Spirit Abyss collapsed into bloody mists. These essences then entered the respective leaders.

Such a development shocked the spectators. The juniors were here to lend their blood to their ancestors, but now, these ancestors instantly took everything from their legions. It was the same as dissecting a chicken for an egg or draining a pond for the fish!

Ling Fengyun quietly sighed. He understood what they wanted to do.

“Buzz!” After devouring the essences of the legions, the three’s vitality erupted several times. They were greatly replenished at this moment. However, they didn’t attack Li Qiye right away.

“Bang!” At the Ancestral Terra, a divine ray shot to the sky. A tree swayed back and forth before shattering the sky vault in order to open a door.

At this critical moment, Creek Bamboo screamed: “Now!”

“Boom!” At the Spirit Abyss, a treasure covered in primordial chaos jumped out. With its appearance, the treasure currently in Stygian’s hand oozed out primordial chaos as well. He relied on this treasure to form a chaotic dao platform.

At the same time, a treasured gem flew out of the Dream Empyrean and instantly lit up.

This made Shen Mengtian’s divine reflection radiate with a blinding light. It shot out many laws as well.

“Clank!” Shen Mengtian constructed a dao portal inside the

chaotic dao platform. This dao portal then latched onto certain spatial coordinates.

“Boom!” Suddenly, this portal emitted a terrifying and unstoppable siphoning force.

“Go!” Creek Bamboo reminded everyone of this fleeting opportunity.

“Buzz!” The five of them were sucked into this dao portal and teleported away.

“Bang!” Just a split second after they disappeared, the immortal lights crushed both the platform and the portal.

The five reappeared back at the Ancestral Terra. They had no color in their complexions due to the great amount of energy they expended for this escape. They were still shaken with fear and couldn’t speak at all.

“They got away?” Many were astonished by this swift escape. They didn’t expect the group to be able to do so at all.

“Extraordinary, they managed to escape.” The masters nearby nodded their heads.

Li Qiye wasn’t surprised at all. He softly smiled and stared at the treasure doused in primordial chaos in the abyss as well as the gentle gem near the empyrean and stated: “It wouldn’t be so easy to find them if they remained hidden. Not bad, it is time for me destroy the Ancestral Terra and harvest.”

Soon after these words came out, the group who made it back to the terra were speechless like dogs that have lost their masters. They didn’t dare to leave this area at all.

There was no location safer than here right now. After all, it was still under the protection of three ancestral trees. If it was any other place, Li Qiye might be able to penetrate the defenses easily.

Li Qiye’s declaration shocked both the experts watching through

their mirrors and the masters nearby. At this moment, they realized that he was aiming for the terra and abyss as well.

He took one step forward with deities paving a supreme path for him. Multiple phenomena emerged with divine followers worshipping him. The nine heavens and ten earths were moved; the Yin and Yang, as well as the cycle of reincarnation, were reformed. He was the current master of the immortals, the lord of all.

As he stepped towards the terra, the mountains and rivers lost their brilliance. All existences trembled in fear as if all of Heaven Spirit was faltering beneath his feet.

Many people could imagine a scene where all the disciples from the terra were quivering in droves, squeezed into a corner where their clothes rustled.

The five combatants were watching his slow pace towards the terra. They turned pale with shaking legs.

# Chapter 1524: Ancestral Terra

---

The Ancestral Terra was a lineage with three treefathers — one of the strongest in Heaven Spirit. It stood out among the treants and was considered to be the safest area in the world.

It was a large landmass residing inside the Jade Sea that spanned tens of millions of miles. Such a continent was nothing in the other eight worlds.

However, it was extremely luxurious in Heaven Spirit. Lineages who had this much land in this world could be counted on one's fingers. Not even an imperial lineage might have access to this vast territory. Land was as valuable as gold in Heaven Spirit. Thus, such a large continent was a coveted treasure in everyone's eyes.

Alas, no sect or people dared to have any ideas about it. Just think about it, what was the meaning behind having three ancestral trees? It was definitely the hardest place to attack.

Due to their protection, it was also known as a location impregnable by even Immortal Emperors.

When Shen Mengtian's group followed Creek Bamboo to the Ancestral Terra, their intent was very clear. They wanted to use this supreme defense to avoid Li Qiye. As long as they stayed in this place, there was no way Li Qiye could attack.

At this moment, countless experts watched as Li Qiye approach the terra.

He was walking on a supreme path with each step crossing one world. He soon traversed one domain after another, allowing him to travel from the Broken God Cliff to the Ancestral Terra.

The entire terra was without a single sound. It was as if all of its disciples and creatures were hiding in their nests.

Just imagine this scene. This was a mighty lineage with absolute power, capable of calling for rain and winds in Heaven Spirit. Only

an imperial lineage with an emperor present would dare to oppose them.

Alas, the imperious sect has turned into a turtle that shrank into its shell. Its disciples didn't dare to exit the main gate.

They have never experienced such humiliation before. Fear wouldn't be on their minds unless an emperor were to attack. After all, no one else could even attempt to launch an assault.

Today, after Creek Bamboo ran back, these disciples were completely aghast. This was their strongest and oldest ancestor, yet Li Qiye completely obliterated him. Moreover, he had an alliance with other masters as well.

Thus, they didn't dare to breathe loudly and listened to their seniors' orders. All went into hiding and stayed within their own clans.

"This is actually happening to the Ancestral Terra." The cultivators in the world were in awe of this scene.

Normally, the terra's disciples were pompous, aggressive, and didn't give a damn about anyone. Today's scene painted a stark contrast in comparison.

"It's about time they get taught a lesson." Some cultivators were cheering inside. Too many in Heaven Spirit have suffered the bombastic attitude from the terra, so they were gleefully gloating at this moment.

While standing right outside, Li Qiye stared at the Ancestral Terra and smiled: "Should I make my way in, or will you come out and accept your deaths?"

Even the invincible masters were stricken with anticipation. Li Qiye was actually doing it. They wanted to see whether the miracle creator could continue to do his work and break the terra with its three ancestral trees.

"Fellow Daoist Li, no, Young Noble Li, it is better to let go of

grievances.” Creek Bamboo showed his face outside the terra and surrendered: “We accept our defeat in the war today.”

Seeing him raise the white flag made everyone in the world take a deep breath. This was Creek Bamboo, someone whose line had produced two treefathers. Alas, despite hiding in the safest location in the world, he still chose to surrender.

This truly shocked the crowd. No one expected for him to surrender like this one day.

“As you have said, this is a battle.” Li Qiye chuckled in response: “A war is no joke. The losers must pay a great price.”

Creek Bamboo hesitated for a moment before acquiescing: “What price do you desire, Young Noble Li?”

At this time, they had no other choice. It was either to fight Li Qiye to the very end or negotiate the conditions after losing completely.

Li Qiye freely stated: “What I want... I’m afraid you can’t make this decision or satisfy me.”

“Young Noble Li, what do you want?” Shen Mengtian and Stygian came out as well.

Li Qiye smirked before taking his time answering: “What I want isn’t too outrageous. One, all of you will commit suicide...”

“This demand is too unreasonable!” Creek Bamboo’s expression sank and interrupted him: “Young Noble Li, there is no denying that we have lost. However, it doesn’t mean that we can’t rise again, we still have a chance. If you want treasures, spirit medicines, and other items, we can give them to you. However, we cannot obey when you ask for our lives.”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye leisurely replied: “It’s all in the eyes of the beholder. You feel that your lives are valuable, but in my eyes, they’re not worth mentioning.”

“I am a benevolent person.” He grinned: “I’m giving you one last chance right now. I don’t mind if you still resist either. I shall trample your Ancestral Terra, Spirit Abyss, and the Dream Empyrean. Remember, this is war, and since you have chosen this path, you must pay the price!”

The faces of the three turned quite ugly, but they didn’t have a response.

“I’ll make the deal with you.” Ling Fengyun appeared and slowly spoke after hearing Li Qiye’s condition: “I can let you do as you please, but you must spare the Roaring Conch!”

He walked out without any resistance and surrendered completely to Li Qiye.

“A war can’t end that easily. I have given you a chance before the fight started, but you didn’t value it.” Li Qiye looked at him and smiled: “The Roaring Conch chose to oppose me, so they must pay as well.”

“Well...” Ling Fengyun’s expression sank after hearing this.

“You can feel that I’m being too harsh.” Li Qiye added: “But remember, I am the one in the position to talk about conditions while all of you are fish on a chopping block. Since you chose to surrender, I won’t massacre and annihilate the Roaring Conch completely. Nevertheless, they must still pay a great price. This is the result of opposing me.”

Fengyun pondered for a moment as he couldn’t hastily make a decision. It took him some time before he sincerely gave up: “Young Noble Li, my life is in your hands. My only hope and final request is that you will spare the Roaring Conch.”

“I do appreciate talents, but it is too late now. You can’t negotiate any longer, the conch must pay.” Li Qiye responded with a faint smile.

“What do you want, Young Noble?” Fengyun gave up since he

was out of options. It was either a fight to the death or surrender.

“The Roaring Conch!” Li Qiye calmly said: “I can spare its disciples, but I want the conch! Of course, if they oppose me, there will be no mercy.”

Fengyun blurted: “Impossible!”

“Once again, I am the one giving you a choice. You can choose to die fighting and I’ll annihilate the Roaring Conch. Of course, its disciples can destroy the ship too if they want, I don’t mind. I just want the world to see the fate of those who oppose me. However, surrender and I’ll spare their lives.”

Fengyun couldn’t speak. He understood just how limited his options were.

Everyone in Heaven Spirit was eager to hear his decision. Keep in mind that if the disciples from the conch were to lose their ship, it would be the same as losing their home and ancestral ground. From then on, the sect would continuously decline. The Roaring Conch shall be no more.

# Chapter 1525: Ling Fengyuns Surrender

---

Li Qiye smiled casually while looking at the hesitating Fengyun: “My patience is limited, don’t make me wait. Answer now or wait for the destruction of the Roaring Conch!”

Fengyun gritted his teeth before answering with a serious tone: “Fine, I agree to surrender. The Roaring Conch will be yours as well, but you must spare its disciples.”

Li Qiye flatly replied: “I won’t trouble the obedient, but any resistance shall be put down without mercy.”

Fengyun had no response. He wasn’t an ancestor from there so he couldn’t force all of its disciples to give up. This was the best that he could do.

Heaven Spirit was silenced by this scene. Many people became sentimental at the ultimate fate of this fallen hero.

Even though he has surrendered, no one would mock or look down on him.

He simply came this time at the beseech of the Roaring Conch. He still acted honorably before this outcome and could fight to the end if he didn’t care for the Roaring Conch’s fate. If he were to die in battle, his name would still spread to the future generations.

However, he chose to give up. Everyone understood that he would die anyway, but he still chose this disgraceful exit in order to save the conch’s disciples despite not being from the sect.

Thus, many found his submission to be worthy of admiration and respect instead of scorn. He didn’t say anything else and quietly stood to the side while waiting for Li Qiye to make his decision.

In the past, his battle with Immortal Emperor Hao Hai was only a personal bout. However, the battle today was due to grievances between the conch and Li Qiye, so he had no other choice.

He quietly lamented. During his youth, the conch saved his life so today, he shall pay it back to the sect!

“Have you all make up your minds yet?” Li Qiye glanced at Creek Bamboo’s group and chuckled.

“I have nothing to choose. Li Qiye, if you want to kill me, my only response is to fight. I refuse to surrender.” Dualchild laughed and was the first to respond.

He didn’t have any options either unless there was a place in the world where he could hide from Li Qiye’s pursuit. Otherwise, Li Qiye wouldn’t spare him.

Compared to Creek Bamboo, Dualchild was able to let it go since he was alone without any worries or restraints. Even if he were to die in battle, it would be his personal problem.

“A bit brave, not dishonoring your father’s prestige at least.” Li Qiye smiled at him.

“Time waits for no one.” Li Qiye then stared at the other three: “Make your decisions.”

The three promptly glanced at each other to read their intents. They cherished their lives and feared death. After all, living a crappy life was still better than dying honorably in their eyes. Alas, it was time for them to make their choice under the eager eyes of the spectators.

“If you all wish to fight, we can fight together.” Dualchild laughed while the three couldn’t make up their minds.

Among the five masters right now, Dualchild chose to fight while Ling Fengyun chose to surrender. However, these three weren’t the same as Dualchild since he was completely untethered and the only one responsible for his actions.

“Young Noble Li, very well.” In the end, Stygian made his choice: “The winner takes all. We have lost today so I agree to kill myself. However, you must spare the Spirit Abyss!”

“I’m afraid you misunderstood me.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “Before the battle, I could have accepted your appeal via suicide, but it is too late now. Your life is worthless after losing. However, if you wish, I can give you some conditions. First, commit suicide, second, hand over your treasure, third, hand over the abyss just like the conch. With that, I will not massacre your future generations.” With that, he pointed at the treasure floating above the abyss.

“That’s impossible!” The monarch immediately refused.

Li Qiye elaborated: “Remember, I’m giving you the choice. None of you are qualified to negotiate with me. I can kill everyone along with your sects. However, since I am a benevolent person, I’m simply giving your future generations a chance.”

Shortly after, the three’s expressions turned unsightly to the extreme.

“The same goes for you, Creek Bamboo. I will spare you future generations if you commit suicide and hand over the Ancestral Terra. Shen Mengtian as well. Hand over the jade and the empyrean’s ancestral ground and I shall show mercy to your children.”

Shen Mengtian shouted: “You are pushing us too far!”

Such conditions made it impossible for him to accept. The jade was a priceless treasure. Even though he has cultivated his divine reflection to its limit, the jade itself greatly helped him. Because of it, he was able to calculate the karmic and samsara cycles. This was the reason why even emperors would ask him about certain things.

Moreover, losing the ancestral ground meant that his disciples would lose their home. From then on, the Dream Empyrean would be no more.

“The end result for me is the same regardless of your choice since I can still kill everyone and take your treasures.” Li Qiye leisurely

smiled: “The only reason why I am giving you a choice is that I don’t want to massacre too many people.”

“Unfortunately.” He gently shook his head: “As ancestors, you didn’t think about your descendants. This is a disaster you brought upon them, so when I destroy your sects, do not blame me for being ruthless. I have given you a chance.”

Creek Bamboo coldly uttered: “Li Qiye, not everything will go the way you want.”

In his eyes, if it was only him committing suicide, he could still accept this in order to barter some peace for the terra. However, asking them to leave their ancestral ground was impossible unless he killed all of them.

“You still think your terra is unbreakable, right? I know, you are still very optimistic with three ancestral trees. I think that you aren’t the only one either. Even Shen Mengtian and Stygian might have this thought.”

“Li Qiye, strong you may be, but don’t forget that you’re still not an emperor.” Creek Bamboo continued: “If you are willing to spare my Ancestral Terra, I will agree to some other conditions.”

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “Since it looks like you have made your choice, it’s time for us to end this. Watch as I destroy your terra.”

“In that case, we’ll fight to the end.” Dualchild laughed and told the other two: “I don’t believe that he can break the defense of three ancestral trees.”

Dualchild wanted to fight to the death from the very beginning, so he naturally wanted the others to join him. In his mind, there was still a chance to reverse the tide, especially with the terra right behind him.

“Yes. Brother Creek Bamboo, maybe we can kill him with the three ancestral trees.” Shen Mengtian bit his lips and made up his

mind. They might as well go all out.

Since they couldn't accept his conditions, they must fight to the end despite the very small chance of winning even with the help of three ancestral trees. At the very least, there was still a glimmer of hope.

Creek Bamboo was hesitant because the battlefield was right at his sect, but he didn't have any other option.

"Li Qiye, your aggression is to blame for this." He made up his mind as well: "We'll take you on then. Our Ancestral Terra has never been afraid of trouble. Come, we'll wait for you."

Having said that, the group disappeared back into the terra. They wanted to wait for him to begin his assault before delivering a fatal blow.

A spectator murmured: "Can Li Qiye really destroy the terra?"

Even though the majority of cultivators in Heaven Spirit had absolute confidence in Li Qiye right now, the terra was too famous as an unbreakable fortress.

Ling Fengyun, who was standing to the side after surrendering, didn't say anything. He simply shook his head. After the last battle, he understood full well that Li Qiye was someone who wouldn't fight without being completely certain of his victory!

# Chapter 1526: More Heavenly Annihilations

---

At this moment, Li Qiye smiled and stepped into the Ancestral Terra. Heart skipped a beat and all experts became unavoidably tense.

They weren't nervous for Li Qiye but for the terra instead. Despite its defensive fame, when Li Qiye was walking forward, everyone certainly felt that he could actually break through. They didn't know why they had such confidence in him though.

“Rumble!” One wave of defensive perimeter rose after another. It resulted in a blindingly dazzling scene.

Universal laws poured down like the waterfalls. Treefathers' runes drowned the terra like a protective ocean.

“Just a minor trick, can't reach the apex.” Li Qiye laughed. His thirteen palaces emitted their golden light and illuminated the world.

In a split second, his inner physiques shined as well. The Void Imperfection and Hell Suppression Physiques erupted instantly. He was able to dodge all the laws and powers while crushing everything else.

Just imagine, the terra's power and law were dodged and destroyed at the same time by his two physiques.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” These perimeters shattered into pieces before Li Qiye's mighty strength.

The terra began to quake as mountains were being trampled by him. The buildings and temples weren't spared either.

“Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!” In many locations at the terra, the holy buildings began to emit their sacred power and laws in order to protect their own vicinity.

Alas, this wasn't enough to withstand his destructive pressure.

These buildings were crushed into ruins. In just a short time, the entire terra was in shambles.

“Li Qiye, stop!” Finally, Creek Bamboo and the others couldn’t sit still any longer. They roared and the terra paid a great price to activate three supreme formations left behind by their treefathers. The four masters tried their best to empower the arrays.

They knew full well that if the Ancestral Terra couldn’t stop Li Qiye, the Spirit Abyss and Dream Empyrean would face demise as well!

“Boom!” Three majestic figures emerged in three different locations. Their emergence heralded a vigorous and peerless aura.

“Treefathers!” Many spectators shouted at their sight.

“Clank!” One of the figures raised a divine sword. When it pointed towards the sky, a sword domain came into being. Billions of sword filled this space as if their descend could slaughter all creatures in the world.

“Boom!” A different figure quickly made a mudra with his hands. Next, all of Heaven Spirit seemed to have turned into a mountain and was held by this figure. When this destructive mudra came down, it carried the might of an entire world. Any existence would be crushed to a pulp before this power!

“Clang!” A bell echoed across the nine heavens. Next, the last figure controlled a large bell that came flying towards Li Qiye. It seemed capable of devouring everything. Nothing could escape and once trapped, they would be refined underneath immediately.

These three formations were left behind by the terra’s treefathers. When the formations were activated to the limit, the treefathers would appear.

All of them instantly tried to kill Li Qiye after taking form. The three waves of power ravaged the world. Any existence would tremble and become powerless in face of this.

“Not bad!” Li Qiye laughed and unleashed his World Seal.

“Boom!” A strike crossed the sky. Three thousand worlds trembled because of it. One could see countless Yin Yang Fish rising to the sky. They formed a huge city, majestic and towering across the ages. It instantly blocked the attacks from the treefathers.

“Bang!” The resulting impact affected all of Heaven Spirit. A huge tsunami was the result.

Ten Worlds Yin Yang Fish Citadel, this was the ultimate blow of the Yin Yang Immortal Refinement Mirror, a wondrous defensive line.

“Clank, clank, clank!” The swords, bell, and mountain were still crazily coming in order to destroy this citadel!

“That’s a Heavenly Annihilation, right?” Many experts exclaimed in shock after feeling the power of the citadel.

While the three formations were going wild, another Heavenly Annihilation descended. It was accompanied by sonorous roars, screeches, and hymns...

A Divine Fish, Immortal Whale, Heavenly Rat, Kui King, Punishing Serpent... Nine supreme figures emerged. These were immortal beasts visiting this world. Their primal and terrible auras engulfed the entire area. All the beasts and birds in the world screamed before dropping to the ground, not daring to move at all.

“Bang!” The nine beasts came killing towards the three great formations. The Ancestral Terra seemed so insignificant before this strike like a tiny boat caught in a storm.

Nine Grand Supremes. This was the Heavenly Annihilation of an Immortal Emperor True Treasure, Divine Beast Zither.

“He can actually use two annihilations in just one breath!” Everyone was stunned after seeing this. They didn’t know what to say at all.

Even the invincible existences were aghast. Even for them, they could also unleash Heavenly Annihilation with a true treasure. However, they couldn't do it in succession like this.

Keep in mind that these attacks used an outrageous amount of blood energy. Even Emperor Assailants wouldn't be able to do it. It was something left for Immortal Emperors.

"We offer our blood to invite the will of the forefathers..." At this time, not only Creek Bamboo's group took action but the ancestors from the terra have also made their move. They gathered the energy together and sacrificed their blood to the three formations to reach their peak potential so that the three treefathers could kill Li Qiye.

"Break!" At this very second, Li Qiye screamed and unleashed the third.

"Boom!" A mountain appeared in the sky and Buddha was descending. This attack annihilated all evils. The pious worshippers began to pray Buddhist chants. This ultimate attack carried the power of a Buddhist world with billions of contributing monks as well as the Buddhist Lord. Everything gathered in this mountain slamming down.

Divine Mount Meru; the Heavenly Annihilation from the Declivity Mountain Bell.

One could imagine the power of three annihilations unleashed at the same time. The world fell into darkness as if the sun in the sky has been pierced!

All creatures were scared out of their mind. They felt that an apocalypse was coming.

During this darkness, everyone saw a shocking scene. The triple combination pierced through the terra. In this split second, debris went flying everywhere. When the dusts settled, there was a terrible crater left behind along with an amazing spectacle.

After a good while, Heaven Spirit regained its brilliance. The sunlight began to shine across the world again.

People could finally see three incredible trees appeared at the terra. They were sealing and protecting the entire sect while emitting a divine radiance to stop the remnant force of the three Heavenly Annihilations.

Nevertheless, an unfathomable crater was still created.

“Ancestral trees!” The masters of Heaven Spirit shouted after seeing them.

# Chapter 1527: Against The Ancestral Trees

---

Seeing the three ancestral trees standing in the middle of the world protecting the ancestral terra suddenly made many people feel relieved.

They were considerably old yet their lifeforce was still plentiful. It looked as if they could live for another million years.

Heaven Spirit found peace with their coming. It seemed that as long as they were around, both the Ancestral Terra and Heaven Spirit would be perfectly fine.

“Our ancestral trees!” The disciples from the terra jubilated after seeing these trees. In their eyes, as long as the trees were around, they would never falter regardless of who they were facing.

With the apocalypse caused by the three Heavenly Annihilations, there were many craters now surrounding the terra. The main region was still protected by the trees.

They became invincible the moment they took root and became one with the earth, allowing them to have the same power as when they were alive.

“They’ve finally awakened!” Creek Bamboo and the others heaved a sigh of relief. Everything would be fine now.

Ancestral trees didn’t wake up so easily unless their lineage was about to face an existential crisis.

The three annihilations could be considered as such and would have wiped out the terra completely.

“So that’s an ancestral tree.” Many experts in Heaven Spirit were in awe. The masters became emotional as well. Even emperors might not be able to break through these awakened trees at the terra unless they were willing to pay an exorbitant cost.

Some people took a deep breath. This was the true power of the

terra; no wonder why their disciples would act so arrogant. They really had the backing to do so. After all, too few sects enjoyed this privilege like the terra.

“Would Li Qiye be able to break through the protection of three ancestral trees?” Among the spectators nearby, some began to doubt Li Qiye’s abilities.

“Buzz!” One of the ancestral trees took action. A single branch thrust out in such a simple manner but it was akin to the most terrible sword move. There was no overly convoluted path or variation, just a direct thrust yet nothing in the world could stop or escape from it.

Even Nine Worlds’ God Kings became afraid before this throat-piercing attack but Li Qiye only smiled without dodging.

“Whoosh!” The World Seal appeared with the Peacock Tree. Immortal rays engulfed the sky like a peacock parading its tail. With a loud impact and sparks sputtering everywhere, this barrier of light managed to stop the thrusting branch.

The sound wasn’t earth-shatteringly loud but everyone was shaken to the bones and became dizzy. Some immediately dropped to the ground and couldn’t get back up.

“Rustle!” A different ancestral tree took action with a downward slash of a branch. Despite not being a divine weapon, this slash left behind an indelible scar in the sky.

Primordial chaos emerged on its path. This was a slash capable of cutting through everything in this world, returning them to the primordial chaos.

Souls left the body before this attack. Everyone could feel themselves visiting the Yellow River after being split into two halves.

Suddenly, a blessed tree with many vines emerged and wove together into a majestic wall to stop the incoming slash.

“Heavenvine!” Many people shouted in horror: “That’s the ancestral vine from the Heavenvine Citadel. Why is here now?”

“That’s not the ancestral vine.” People looked over at the citadel back at the Jade Sea. This was the same case as the Peacock Tree since the citadel was still there. This vine tree ahead was an exact copy as well.

After curing the vine and gaining its permission, Li Qiye has also copied it with his World Seal.

“This is too unreal.” Everyone became dazed: “First he had the Peacock Tree, now the heavenly vine as well? Li Qiye’s methods are so terrifying.”

“Buzz!” The third ancestral tree attacked with a shooting leaf. Despite being a little leaf, everyone had the illusion that it was made from three thousand worlds, aiming to decapitate Li Qiye.

Just imagine, three thousand worlds have turned into a throwing weapon. Its power was completely immeasurable and could cut down many stars in an instant.

A gigantic bamboo tree appeared. With loud rustles, it moved its branches like mountain ranges scattering across the sky to stop the ultimate leaf.

“What is that?” The crowd this time couldn’t recognize this particular bamboo tree.

This was, of course, the guardian deity of Giant Bamboo. It came out powerfully and stopped the leaf from that ancestral tree.

In just a short time, there were three ancestral trees above the terra on top of the Peacock Tree, Heavenvine, and Giant Bamboo. This was a magnificent and stirring scene.

“This is like there are six ancestral trees!” Even the most knowledgeable old men said emotionally: “I’ve never seen a more spectacular sight than this in my whole life!”

The existences in Heaven Spirit felt suffocated as if their death was approaching.

At this moment, the children in the terra became slack-jawed. Stygian and the others were stunned too with their palm sweating from being nervous.

They had an ominous foreboding with a sense of unease. They felt a bit regretful for not agreeing to Li Qiye's demand!

"So terrifying, we should never oppose Li Qiye." After seeing him summon the Peacock Tree, Heavenvine, and Giant Bamboo, even Emperor Assailants broke out in cold sweats. Such methods were unstoppable in the nine worlds. No wonder why he was so confident and arrogant. Who could actually compete for the Heaven's Will against him?

"Bang!" After the successful block, the three ancestral trees emitted a surging immortal light. Everyone could hear a buzzing sound. In this blink of an eye, they felt that the trees were sucking all of the power from Heaven Spirit.

It was as if the power from all the earth veins were being siphoned by the trees. The power from all plants in Heaven Spirit heeded their call, allowing the trees to gain this power of life.

"Bang!" Their true power erupted by several magnitudes. In a split second, they unleashed the same attacks as before. The thrust pierced through the immortal lights; the slash cut through Heavenvine while the leaf also made it through Giant Bamboo's defensive barrier.

All three attacks came from different directions straight towards Li Qiye. In the end, his own trees were only copies and couldn't compare to real ancestral trees. The real ones took root in their earth so they had immeasurable power.

"Careful!" Many experts before their mirrors were astounded. Some even blurted at Li Qiye.

All eyes opened wide and some people even felt disappointed. Even a Nine Worlds' Godking would die before this onslaught.

"Buzz!" In this key moment, crystals covered Li Qiye's body. The branches and leaf struck him but there was no damage.

"What!" People couldn't believe their own eyes and had to shout.

"What is this?" They saw the glittering and translucent crystal body stopping the attacks. Even the strongest crowd was amazed.

"Heaven's Will Crystal Physique, the legendary impenetrable defense. But how the hell did he cultivate this, isn't he a human? How was it a successful cultivation?" Even those who knew the merit law couldn't believe it.

# Chapter 1528: Invincible Battle

---

The two branches and leaf from the three ancestral trees could make short work of a Nine Worlds' Godking.

However, Li Qiye's shiny body under the protection of the crystal physique was impervious even against the ancestral trees. They simply couldn't break through.

"Whoosh!" They tried again with the thickest branches this time in the most destructive blow.

In a split second, it was as if three treefathers were attacking themselves. The branches acted like palms deriving wondrous laws to kill Li Qiye.

The grand dao cracked beneath this attack. All of Heaven Spirit suffered earthquakes. The strongest wouldn't be able to escape this disaster unless they were an Immortal Emperor.

However, the shiny light continued to flow on Li Qiye's body. He was completely unharmed.

"Heaven's Will Crystal Physique, untouchable even by emperors. How the hell did a human like Li Qiye cultivate this supreme art from the golem race?" An invincible character exclaimed emotionally.

Another powerful being predicted: "I wonder how long his physique can last? If it is on the same level as Immortal Emperor Jing Yu, it will completely surpass even a grand completion Indestructible Diamond Physique."

Li Qiye chuckled while looking at the trees: "Anything else? Go for it."

He was completely unbeatable with the crystal physique since the trees couldn't kill him as long as it was activated.

The Stygian Monarch's group inside the terra was astonished as

well. They didn't expect Li Qiye to have such an invincible art like the crystal physique. This allowed him to always be in an unlosable position.

Ling Fengyun sighed as well. Li Qiye's power has far exceeded their expectation. It looked like they have underestimated him the entire time.

"Whoosh!" Three more branches stretched out from the trees just like laws. They came together to form a portal.

When this portal opened, it looked like a world of primordial chaos. It was profound and dark with primal energy. It was as if this place has never been visited by man before.

"Banishment, it's a high-level spatial banishment!" Even the strongest was alarmed to see this world behind the portal.

Once banished to this space, even they wouldn't be able to return right away. While being lost inside, even a Nine Worlds' Godking might take anywhere from ten to one thousand years to come back. This was the reason why the strong masters in the crowd were stunned.

"Bang!" A wave emanated from this portal and rushed towards Li Qiye. This spatial wave wanted to drown him and left him nowhere to run.

The experts understood what the ancestral trees wanted to do instantly. Li Qiye has used the crystal physique so they couldn't kill him. The only thing possible in this situation was to banish him so that he wouldn't be able to return.

Li Qiye didn't bother avoiding this and smiled: "Want to play with space? Very well, we'll see who is better."

With that, the thirteen palaces suppressing Heaven Spirit quaked. It looked as if the coordinates of the world were visible and they locked onto a particular one.

Li Qiye slightly pressed down with his palm on space itself. The

entire area of the terra was about to be melted.

Even though the terra had three ancestral trees, they still couldn't stop Space Removal from affecting the terra. The space outside began to melt and this directly affected and resonated with the terra's location.

“Boom!” A different portal opened right outside like a primal beast wanting to swallow the entire world.

“Rumble!” A vast amount of seawater overcame the terra with a deafening blast. The entire land started to shake.

“The Maelstrom!” The experts shouted in horror. The Maelstrom suddenly appeared right outside of the terra and intended on pulling the sect inside along with the Jade Sea itself.

“This again...” People turned pale while watching this.

Li Qiye has used Space Connection before back at the War Cliff to destroy the Regal Valley by using the Maelstrom. Right now, he did it again with more preparation. Because of this, the terra was still affected despite being protected by the ancestral trees.

The portal leading to the deep space banishment shattered. Even though it was very powerful, it was no match for the Maelstrom.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The terra was greatly affected by this earth-shattering development. The Maelstrom seemed to be extremely hungry and could even bite the stars in the sky.

This area fell into a terrible darkness. It was doomsday for the disciples there.

“Boom!” In the midst of this crisis, the trees took action. Branches soared to the sky like waterfalls and poured down countless laws. Each of them turned into a chapter with an ensuing detonation.

The chapter emitted an unstoppable divinity and left three marks from the trees on this space.

“Buzz.” The space ripped open by Li Qiye began to close. The devouring power of the Maelstrom gradually decreased.

“Not bad at all.” Li Qiye smiled and didn’t panic while the trees were intending to seal this space.

“Boom!” He attacked again with his World Seal by unleashing an annihilation.

A terrible karmic flame descended and incinerated all things.

The trees activated their most powerful defense but many of their leaves instantly withered beneath this terrible karmic flame. The defensive line failed to stop the fire completely.

“Ah!” Though the flame didn’t actually make contact with the terra, the terrible heat wave seemed to be burning the whole place. Many cultivators couldn’t escape in time and were instantly scorched into coals.

Karmic Imperial Flame! This was the annihilation of the Brightflame Cauldron. It contained the karmic flames of the nine heavens and ten earths with an unimaginable power.

“Boom!” This was only the beginning of the end. A second annihilation came right after.

Darkness engulfed and stained everything around this realm.

This was the ultimate attack from the Immortal Devouring Evil Jar that made the world tremble!

It didn’t end there. “Boom!” Even the deities would fall before this strike. The Nine Grand Supremes attacked again instantly.

“Bang!” A fourth annihilation came right after.

# Chapter 1529: Ancestral Mark

---

Divine Mount Meru! The fourth annihilation came down in the form of a towering mountain as if wanting to shatter everything between the heaven and earth!

“Clank!” A saber hymn echoed in the sky. In the blink of an eye, the fifth annihilation descended with the World Seal turning into a one-of-a-kind saber!

Benevolence Prayer! This was the Heavenly Annihilation of the Benevolent Saber that had been imprinted to the World Seal.

One could imagine the power of five annihilations at once. It was as if five emperors had joined the fray.

“Is he insane!?” All of Heaven Spirit fell into this apocalyptic scene. The creatures here were scared out of their mind.

No one would ever forget such a frightening scene for the rest of their lives.

Even a Legendary Godking would be rendered to ashes before five annihilations. This incoming doom was about to end Heaven Spirit. Godkings were mere ants before this attack.

“Rumble!” Compared to others, the disciples at the terra got a much better view of this world-destroying power. Even with the protection of the ancestral trees, chasms formed in their home. The terra itself was being ravaged and on the verge of a total collapse.

More explosions detonated. As the annihilations raged on, the closed portal opened again with the Maelstrom showing its face outside of the terra and beginning its swallowing process.

“Ah!” If the trees were to fortify this spatial coordinates on top of stopping the annihilations, they couldn’t protect the entire terra.

In a short time, many buildings were sucked in by the

Maelstrom. This scene was too magnificent. Tens of thousands of buildings and temples were gone in an instant, uprooted into the sky and twisted into nothingness.

Who wouldn't be dazed and frightened by this scene?

The terra itself was helpless in this situation. If this continued on, even if the annihilations didn't do the job, the terra would be sucked into the Maelstrom completely.

"Is this the end for the terra?" The astonished crowd wondered as the land shook even more violently.

"Boom!" A new world expanded with loud explosions before countless runes shot to the sky. The runes then turned into a magical ocean.

The runes then gathered together into three ancestral marks. Thunders and bolts of lightning flashed in the sky right after as if an emperor was undergoing a tribulation.

"That's the ancestral mark! Only ancestral trees would have them!" A spectator shouted after seeing the three marks.

An ancestral mark was the foundation to become a treefather. One must form the mark then refine it into the foundation before creating an ancestral weapon. That's the prerequisites to become a treefather.

However, when a treefather returned to the origin, the ancestral weapon would disperse, unavailable to the future generations.

During this juncture of life and death for the terra, the ancestral trees actually formed their ancestral marks. Anyone would find this unbelievable.

"Om-" A burst of immortal noise resounded. Amazing lights came down and this power engulfed the entire terra. It was as if a true immortal was now protecting this location.

"Boom!" Under this new power boost, the trees withstood the

five annihilations while closing the dao portal. The Maelstrom finally disappeared again.

The disaster had passed and the world fell into an eerie silence again. The disciples at the terra still couldn't calm down.

“Rumble!” Under the immortal power, the shattered terra began to come together. The chasms and craters disappeared in a short time. It had taken on its old and perfect form.

“Did the Ancestral Terra win?” One expert regained his wits and asked.

“Looks like it has survived but I'm afraid the three trees have paid a great price. They won't recover for a while.” A supreme stared at the terra with a dignified expression.

The trees might have survived the calamity but not without cost. They looked spiritless with many leaves and branches drying up. Only the marks floating above them were fine.

“Even though it was to protect the terra, the trees have shortened their lifespan.” An invincible character noticed the clues and said emotionally.

Remember that after taking roots with the earth, these trees could live for a long time. However, in order to withstand the five annihilations and the Maelstrom, the three trees exchanged their lifespan to protect the terra.

“I'd rather commit suicide than oppose Li Qiye!” A different master was quite startled. Chills emanated down his spine as he uttered with a pale complexion.

This was a place praised to be unconquerable even by Immortal Emperors. Though Li Qiye has yet to take it down, forcing the trees to pay a heavy price was already an incredible and frightening feat.

For these masters, opposing Li Qiye didn't stop at their own death. It meant that their sects and future generations would be slaughtered by him as well!

“Hah! We’re still alive, our ancestors are invincible!” After a long time, the disciples at the terra cheered: “Our invincible ancestors shall always protect us!”

They began to prostrate to worship the ancestral trees.

Li Qiye wasn’t surprised at this outcome at all. He smiled faintly at the trees.

“Li Qiye, you have lost and will never be able to break our Ancestral Terra. Be smart and leave instead of opposing us.” Creek Bamboo Immortal was crazily happy and shouted at Li Qiye.

Surviving this calamity made him completely confident. As long as their ancestral trees were around, their sect would be eternal and indestructible.

“Who says I’ve lost?” Li Qiye smiled leisurely.

“With our ancestral trees around, you will never be able to take us down. It’s not too late to leave, otherwise...” Creek Bamboo uttered coldly.

“I pity your ancestral trees.” Li Qiye chuckled in response: “Though people say that two treefathers came from your branch, their achievements have absolutely nothing to do with you. You don’t even know what your trees want or desire yet you are standing here boasting? If they could come back to life, the first thing they’ll do is crush you to death!”

“You!” Creek Bamboo was livid from hearing this and pointed at Li Qiye without knowing what to say.

“Brother Bamboo, no need to argue with this junior. If he wants to speak nonsense, let him.” Stygian consoled.

The other masters heaved a sigh of relief. They thought that there was a chance now with the trees around.

“Li Qiye, I won’t waste words with you. Scram.” Creek Bamboo took a deep breath and uttered: “It is all in the past, we won’t

pursue this any further and end this here.”

Li Qiye laughed and said: “End it? That’s not up to you. Open your dog eyes, watch how I shall destroy your terra. Even the three great ancestral trees will only act as nourishment.”

Having said that, he turned around and disappeared.

“What?” Many people exchanged glance after seeing him gone.

Just now, he uttered ferociously about destroying the terra yet he just got up and leave? That seemed contradictory.

“It’s over like that?” The mass was completely lost about his intention.

This was the same for Creek Bamboo. However, Li Qiye’s fierce words earlier made him feel uneasy.

“Is he concocting some new plans?” He paused for a moment before murmuring.

# Chapter 1530: The Tree That Shoulders The Heaven

---

“Brother Bamboo, don’t worry, he’s only bluffing. He used all of his methods just now and still failed to break the protection from the three ancestral trees. I think he has given up.” Dualchild comforted the worrying fella.

Creek Bamboo stared at the three ancestral marks floating above. He couldn’t anything but sigh. There was no other way for him since it was a battle to the death. The only thing he could do was to pray for the ancestral trees to suppress Li Qiye if there was a chance. Otherwise, the threat would always loom and he’ll come back eventually.

In fact, Meng Shentian and Dualchild had a heavy heart as well. Li Qiye’s power far exceeded their imagination. In the beginning, they thought that they could kill him by working together. Who would have thought that he would be pursuing them like dogs?

After fleeing back to the ancestral terra, they wanted to see the ancestral trees killing Li Qiye. Alas, the result frightened them as well. Even these trees couldn’t do anything to him.

Despite putting on a relaxed expression as if they have won the battle today, they were feeling very uncomfortable. They could live for now but the feud had been made. Given Li Qiye’s current unstoppable momentum, he would surely become emperor in the future.

Once he ascended to the throne, he would make his way back here. At that point, their Dream Empyrean and Spirit Abyss could only wait for him to destroy them.

They felt very regretful at this moment for being overconfident in the beginning. They wanted to do everything possible to capture Li Qiye for the Reincarnation Nine-Leaves and the method to

cultivate thirteen palaces. This was even an attempt to kill a future Immortal Emperor.

Nevertheless, they underestimated his strength. With one misstep, they had lost everything.

There was no medicine to cure regrets in this world. This feeling right now couldn't change the current situation.

A serenity entered the world after Li Qiye left. Even though he failed to destroy the terra, this battle had still shocked everyone in Heaven Spirit. Even three ancestral trees working together had to exchange their lifespan to stop Li Qiye. What a frightening result.

Moreover, he was completely untouched and left so easily. Just think about it? Who could be his match now given his current power?

"It looks like he was only warming up and messing around prior to this. He never used his full power or resorted to all of his methods before." Experts who had seen him fight against Meng Zhentian commented softly.

This was the moment when previous spectators realized that from beginning to end, Li Qiye never considered someone like Meng Zhentian as his match. It was all a game to him. Fighting and killing Zhentian was only a warm-up.

They understood that if Li Qiye treated him as an opponent from the start, the moment he went all out, Zhentian wouldn't even have the chance to retaliate. He would be decapitated just like Dried Tree Divine Ancestor with just one move!

"Did Li Qiye give up?" An expert standing before a mirror wondered.

"No, this is only the beginning. The terra shall end after today." His fellow disciple standing next to him answer with a serious tone.

"Junior Brother, why do you say so?" The experts didn't

understand: “I don’t think Li Qiye can take down three ancestral trees.”

“That’s because you don’t know him.” The person replied: “I have been observing him for a long time ever since the massacre at the Peacock Land then the Dongting Lake and Regal Valley... All along, he has been staying true to his words. If he says he’s going to murder your family, no one will be able to stop him. He’s not the type to attempt anything uncertain so the terra is done for!”

The Senior Brother was stricken with fear after hearing this. Being an enemy with Li Qiye was definitely anyone’s nightmare. Death was inevitable regardless of how powerful they might be.

Everyone held their breath waiting for Li Qiye to take action. However, time passed by and there was no sign of him. Most thought that he has given up.

In fact, even the disciples from the terra became relieved. Their ancestral trees have finally stopped Li Qiye so they cheered. The storm has been weathered.

“Playtime’s over.” Alas, their celebration was quickly interrupted by Li Qiye’s voice echoing across Heaven Spirit.

He emerged again above the Divine Tree Ridge and everyone could hear his declaration: “It’s time for my massacre!”

“Poof!” Li Qiye opened his Death Chapter. It opened wide and blotted out the entire tree ridge before entering its ground.

“Rumble!” In a short time, countless runes emerged around Godhalt. They came together to form an even bigger chapter over the entire continent.

These were the marks from the Death Chapter left deep underground by Li Qiye when he was walking across this continent.

“Poof!” A death energy surged like an unstoppable flood. It poured out and drowned the Divine Tree Ridge. Li Qiye used this

vast energy to revive the dead in this area.

“What is he doing?!” Stygian back at the terra had a terrible premonition.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A burst of explosions resounded like an earthquake vibrating across Heaven Spirit. The worst part was the stars falling down in the sky, leaving trails of blaze behind them.

In a short time, a new calamity has arrived. Even the sun in the sky was affected and seemed to be on the verge of dropping down.

“Boom!” All of Heaven Spirit turned dark. It wasn't because something was swallowing the sunlight but rather the sun itself was being blotted out.

Everyone's mouth was wide opened and they couldn't close it at all. Their soul left their body completely. Both ants and invincible existences were pissing in their pants.

After a long time, one master finally murmured: “What, what is that thing!?”

“That's... the Divine Tree Ridge!” Another master answered him after taking a deep breath.

An incredible event has happened. The ridge that was lying across Godhalt was now towering above the continent.

In the past, when looking down from above, the ridge spanning for endless miles looked like a tree that has fallen on Godhalt. At this moment, it looked like a dried tree standing on top of Godhalt. Meanwhile, the Undying Gate was located right at the base and roots of this tree.

What used to be mountain ranges before were now branches on top of this tree. Just think about it, these awesome and behemoth spectacles were mere branches. Just how shocking was this?

Despite the majority of the tree being barren, it still covered more than half of Heaven Spirit.

“What the hell...” Cultivators stared at the sky in a daze.

Just imagine long and thick branches from Godhalt crossing through the large oceans. The size of this tree was beyond measure.

“Then, then the legend is true? The Divine Tree Ridge is a giant tree that fell on Godhalt. A real monster of an existence!” Even the masters were astounded and became pale with fright.

No one believed this legend because they weren’t willing to believe that there was such a large tree in this world.

“Boom!” The entire world seemed to have exploded with this deafening blast.

At this moment, the dead tree suddenly exuded a boundless green expanse like an ocean spewing out!

# Chapter 1531: Invincible Tree

---

“Boom!” A green light illuminated all of Heaven Spirit. The entire world was drowned in a blink.

At this time, the withered tree was nowhere to be found. Only a verdant version emerged before the world and covered everything.

Just one leaf alone was monstrous in size. The new tree couldn't be measured by any conventional means since it was several times larger than the dead version. Moreover, the branches were much more numerous with countless leaves growing from them. Each leaf was already unimaginably large, the size of a mountain or a plain.

At this time, this boundless vitality pervaded Heaven Spirit and bathed its inhabitants. Everyone felt relaxed as if they were several thousand years younger.

“Is it obtaining immortality?” Everyone became emotional while immersed in this life force.

This was the tree returning to its peak form with the Death Chapter, not a type of rebirth. It was simply harkening back to its past life.

“Time to end this.” Li Qiye's voice echoed across the world.

“Rumble!” Gigantic dragons rushed out from the Spirit Abyss right away and made their appearance clear by howling.

“Boom!” They began to tear the abyss apart and pulled out the deepest location from this sect.

“Bang!” This location filled with darkness was crushed into nothingness. All protection and seals were insignificant before these dragons.

“Those aren't dragons!” Upon a closer inspection, the masters would see that they were thick branches coming out of the earth.

“Whoosh!” A branch came down from the sky towards the primordial weapon floating above the abyss. This was an artifact engulfed in primordial chaos. Nevertheless, it still couldn’t escape from the tree’s suppression. The branch instantly coiled around this weapon and dragged it away from the abyss.

After it was taken away, a series of explosions happened. The abyss began to crumble into pieces.

“Kill!” Many ancestors and experts saw the artifact being dragged away. They wildly howled and rushed towards the branch in order to take it back for it was everything to their sect.

“Pluff!” Other branches shot down like arrows. The result was obvious. All of these ancestors and disciples were instantly killed including those who didn’t participate. They were skewered by the branches together into a string.

In a short period, the dead disciples were still confused. They didn’t even last one move before these branches.

“Oh god!” The young and old at the abyss were scared out of their mind while running out of the abyss.

However, Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at these defenseless people and didn’t try to kill him. He intended on sparing the young and old or they wouldn’t have made it outside.

“No!” The abyss was annihilated so quickly. Effort accumulated from many generations turned into ashes in the blink of an eye. This made Stygian scream and rushed out from the terra.

However, it was too late. Another branch descended and nailed him to death in the sky. His blood dripped down one drop at a time to the ocean and slowly disappeared. It was an indignant death.

Their abyss has experienced countless generations using the advantage of Godhalt. Alas, it was all gone now.

All eyes were wide open to see the Stygian Monarch being crucified up above.

“Boom!” More detonations resounded with branches coming down and piercing through the Dream Empyrean.

“Noooo!” The disciples there were massacred in the same manner. The young and old were spared but anyone else who has cultivated was killed!

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The Dream Empyrean was torn asunder. The branches then dragged the antique item away as well as the sect’s treasury.

“Die!” Shen Mengtian inside the Ancestral Terra cried out and soared to the sky to kill these branches. That was the only thing on his mind.

“Boom!” His resistance was futile since he was also nailed to the sky by one of the branches just like Stygian.

“Rustle!” A thick branch coiled towards the direction of the fleeing Roaring Conch and instantly stopped it from moving.

“Do not resist, abandon ship!” Ling Fengyun was horrified as well. He used his top speed to rush towards the conch and yelled sternly.

“But...” A few ancestors hesitated. How could they give up their home so easily?

“Pluff!” Screams came about. All of the ancestors and experts who either hesitated or resisted were skewered.

Even Ling Fengyun couldn’t save them. He could only watch these resisting members die.

“We might have an agreement but there is no mercy for those who do not obey.” Li Qiye’s voice loomed in the sky.

“Leave.” Ling Fengyun couldn’t change the situation. He swept his sleeve and brought all the lucky survivors out of the Roaring Conch. This was a supreme technique that could instantly send them to safety.

“There’s no turning the tide. This isn’t something you can resist. Now, be a normal person and find peace for the rest of your lives.” Fengyun gently sighed and left the refugees since his fate was up to Li Qiye now.

The branch pulled the Roaring Conch back. This gigantic ship was now in Li Qiye’s possession.

In the blink of an eye, three great lineages have been eliminated from history. However, the Roaring Conch had a much better result compared to the Spirit Abyss and the Dream Empyrean. Though Li Qiye spared the weak, all of the other disciples and ancestors were massacred completely. However, only a few experts from the Roaring Conch were killed. More than ninety percent of its disciples managed to stay alive.

This was due to Ling Fengyun’s wise decision. If he didn’t surrender and chose to fight like his peers, the Conch would have ended in the same way as the other two sects.

Alas, the ship itself was no more so they have lost their ancestral ground and resources. Furthermore, like Fengyun has said, they needed to live a quiet life from now on since they have lost the chance to rise to domination in the future.

This slightly acceptable outcome was given to them by Ling Fenyun. Otherwise, they would have opposed him and that would end with their destruction!

In a short time, all of Heaven Spirit became quiet. Not to mention ordinary ancestors, even Godkings pissed their pants. Their legs grew weak as they stared at the gigantic tree.

“Time to finish this.” Li Qiye chuckled while everyone else held their breath. After the destruction of these three sects, it was the Ancestral Terra’s turn.

“Ha! I’ll take you on!” Dualchild laughed and left the Ancestral Terra. He understood that the three ancestral trees won’t be able

to protect even themselves so he might as well die an early death instead of prolonging this.

“You shall get one move.” Li Qiye answered: “When my tree is at its peak, even your father would have to take the long way around, let alone you.”

This verdant tree had an unbelievable power at its highest state. Even emperors would be apprehensive about fighting it.

“One move it is, I won’t be begging for mercy.” Dualchild crazily roared: “Die!”

He poured the rest of his vitality and longevity blood onto the true treasure.

“Boom!” A Heavenly Annihilation came out. It shattered the sky vault and severed many branches with an unfathomable might.

Alas, this annihilation still couldn’t oppose the green tree. It instantly shattered this move and crucified Dualchild as well.

However, unlike Shen Mengtian and Stygian, Dualchild died with his eyes closed.

# Chapter 1532: Time To End

---

This was a quiet world stricken with a palpable pressure due to the corpses of Dualchild, Stygian, and Shen Mengtian nailed to the sky. The suffocated crowd had sweat all over.

Remember that these three represented the top existences for Heaven Spirit.

Even if they weren't Emperor Assailants, there was only a little gap. Powerful characters like them could be count on one's hands in Heaven Spirit.

However, against that green tree, they were mere ants and were instantly slaughtered. Just how terrible was its power? Many people recalled what Li Qiye has said earlier. Even if Dualchild's father was in this world, he would still have to take the long way around this tree.

Remember that his father was an emperor. Just thinking about this terrified everyone. The power of this tree has exceeded their imagination. This prompted the question - what the heck was it?

Even though after withering, it turned into the Divine Tree Ridge. Then what about when it was alive?

At this time, people held their breath while looking at the terra. Their heartbeat became rapid because they knew that this was the end for this sect.

Among the five, Shen Mengtian, Stygian, and Dualchild were killed in battle. Ling Fengyun has surrendered. The only one left was Creek Bamboo.

Furthermore, three great powers have been annihilated. The Ancestral Terra most likely couldn't escape this fate either.

It was very somber inside the sect. An air of despair ravaged this place. Just a while ago, the experts were celebrating and thought that the three ancestral trees could protect them from this

disaster. Alas, it was inevitable.

“Let’s do this.” Li Qiye’s voice came from the nine heavens.

“Li Qiye, no, Young Noble Li, I surrender. Our Ancestral Terra will surrender.” Creek Bamboo soared to the sky and raised the white flag.

“We will give up everything and surrender. From now on, The Ancestral Terra is yours!” He beseeched.

“It’s too late.” The faint voice responded: “I have given you an opportunity but you didn’t value it. A missed venture does not return.”

“Young Noble Li, everyone makes mistakes. We lost today and we will hand over the terra, this is our everything, will you still not spare us?” Creek Bamboo begged loudly.

“You didn’t have this thought in the beginning and only changed your mind after facing despair. There is no medicine for regrets in this world.” The voice leisurely said.

“Young Noble Li, as the saying goes, [killing someone is only making their head fall on the ground...](#)” Creek Bamboo continued begging.

“Alright, no need to talk to me about morality or act all pitiful. The grand dao is merciless, there’s no room for mercy. After making the wrong choice, you must face it bravely. The high heaven does not forgive the weak or bully the strong. Though I am not the high heaven, I will not give the enemy a second chance. If I were to lose, I would also face a grotesque end without regrets.” Li Qiye was unmoved.

No one said anything during this cry for mercy from Creek Bamboo.

There was nothing else to say since this was the world of cultivation where the law of the jungle reigned. Once they chose to be enemies, it was a fight to the bitter end.

In a war like this, if Li Qiye were to win, he would slaughter his enemies. But if he had lost, Stygian and others would have ripped him to pieces or maybe even tortured him.

War has always been cruel and the enemies would never show mercy. Because of this, there was no need to reciprocate!

Creek Bamboo stood there with a pale complexion. They were willing to give up everything to stay alive but Li Qiye refused!

He was overwhelmed with regrets since he was the one who brought this disaster upon the Ancestral Terra. It wouldn't only end with an invasion; they would be destroyed just like the empyrean and the abyss.

He regretted not picking the same choice as Ling Fengyun. At the very least, he would have been able to protect his descendants. But now, both the terra and its disciples were about to turn into ashes.

He was too confident at the start due to the protection of the ancestral trees. But then again, no one in the world would have expected such an outcome.

Ultimately, he has become the sinner of the terra for causing its demise!

“Are you ready, doom is here.” Li Qiye’s faint voice descended.

Branches drilled down from the sky straight for the terra. They looked quite weak and fragile but the reality was that nothing could stop them.

“Kill!” Creek Bamboo had no other choice but to die in battle. He roared as his body exploded. His remaining vitality instantly unleashed the last attack. There was only a bloody shadow shooting to the sky containing all of his longevity blood. It was quite destructive in nature.

“Boom!” It still couldn't change anything. The bloody shadow seemed weak against the piercing branches and was instantly killed.

The branches continued onward for the Ancestral Terra. The ancestral marks floating above exuded endless laws that turned into a gigantic shield. It covered all of the sect like the vault of the sky.

“Boom!” The unbelievable happened. This shield actually managed to stop all the branches.

The entire place shook like crazy. The ancestors and experts dropped to the ground from the vibration. The ocean outside had numerous tsunamis as if the land here was about to sink.

“Wow!” Many disciples there cheered after seeing the shield. They saw hope that the ancestral trees could stop the verdant tree’s offense.

“Too bad, this is only the final death throes.” Li Qiye’s voice echoed across the world again.

“Rumble!” In the blink of an eye, thick branches landed down around the sea surrounding the terra. The sect itself lost connection with Heaven Spirit.

“Boom!” Everyone could feel the world quake a little bit. It wasn’t due to an overwhelming force but rather, the connection between the terra and the earth was severed.

Sure enough, the initially radiant marks lost their light as if the ancestral trees’ roots were cut down.

“The ancestral trees can’t borrow the power of the world anymore.” An invincible character understood what was going on and murmured.

Everyone knew that returning to the earth allowed these trees to be one with the world, allowing them to use the strength of the countless earth veins.

However, the verdant tree has severed this connection so the three ancestral trees couldn’t use these earth veins anymore.

“Bang!” The branches pierced through the shield without hesitation. After breaching the area, they coiled around the three ancestral trees like spirit snakes.

“Shit, run away!” The experts here lost all courage. In a short time, it was a scene of chaos. Even some ancestors turned and ran.

“No! Let the young and old escape, we shall stay!” A high ranking ancestor took charge and howled loudly to stop the fleeing party.

In the next second, several ancestors brought a huge ship here and boarded all the young and old before sending them away.

They understood that Li Qiye definitely wouldn't spare them even if they made it to the far horizons. However, he wouldn't pursue the truly helpless so they sent this group away.

In their eyes, even if their terra was about to be destroyed, at the very least, some of their bloodlines could still continue.

I remember this idiom was used long ago, maybe chapter 300-500 and I had a long footnote explaining it. But in short, it is an appeal to morality, a cry for mercy

# Chapter 1533: Destroying The Ancestral Terra

---

Right when the terra's ancestors were taking the young and old away, the fight between Li Qiye and the three ancestral trees was nearing the end.

“Buzz!” Blinding immortal light oozed out of the trees' marks. They were going all out in one last hurrah.

“I'll show you treants what is called an immortal weapon.” Li Qiye answered.

“Whoosh!” The verdant tree blotting out Heaven Spirit had an ancient mark appearing on it. The world was engulfed in its terrible power. This mark was many times stronger than the ancestral trees' marks and made them seem so insignificant.

“What is that?” Even the most powerful treants were shouting after feeling the immortal power of this ancient mark.

“Boom!” The three marks from the ancestral trees immediately disintegrated into thick laws that were instantly siphoned by the verdant tree. It swallowed them and fused them into its own ancient mark.

With a brushing sound, the immortal lights from the three ancestral trees dimmed down instantly after their marks were taken away. They looked like candles in the wind that could be extinguished with a gust of breeze.

“Rumble!” The entire terra was shaking. The branches of the verdant tree coiling around the ancestral began to pull them up from the ground.

“No!” The ancestors and cultivators in the sect screamed pitifully with despair.

In their mind, the ancestral trees represented everything but

now, they were being pulled from the roots. It was too much of a blow to their confidence so despair took over.

“Boom!” Finally, all three trees were taken off completely. Their leaves began to wither after leaving the soil.

These trees took root with the earth so once they left, it meant death! One could imagine the consequence of Li Qiye’s action.

This scene shocked everyone in Heaven Spirit. They stood agape for a long time. Some jaws even nearly dropped to the ground.

Ancestral trees were supreme existences in the mind of many in Heaven Spirit. Rumor has it that not even Immortal Emperors could uproot them.

However, Li Qiye has done so to three of them at the same time. Such a scene was too much to take in. Regardless of who they might be, they were horrified with shuddering legs. Even Emperor Assailants felt the same way.

“No, no, no!” The experts in the terra cried in anguish. From today on, their Ancestral Terra has been erased from Heaven Spirit.

“Ready for death?” Li Qiye’s voice came again after uprooting the trees.

Heaven Spirit was speechless. Everyone understood that facing Li Qiye meant death regardless of who his opponents might be.

The disciples, experts, and even the ancestors were silent. As the ship took the young and old away, Li Qiye didn’t bother pursuing them and simply let them escape.

Of course, some disciples tried to escape secretly but the majority of experts and even ancestors stay behind.

After all, this was their home. They didn’t want to escape and knew that it wasn’t possible either. Once they tried, Li Qiye would start to massacre everyone!

“We’ll fight to the death!” One ancestor rallied the troops in a frenzy.

“Yes, fight to the death!” All the experts felt their blood boiling and were ready to die.

There was no other choice for this was their only end.

In an instant, these disciples formed a grand formation. It was immense, consisting of millions. Once it took form, the blood energy gathered into an ocean of blood.

“Kill!” The disciples inside this array shouted.

With a loud blast, all of the vitality from these disciples unleashed one final blow.

The sky was shattered while the stars rustled. The power of this attack ravaged the world.

“Pointless struggle.” Li Qiye spoke again. At this moment, the branches wove together into a green spear that was thrown straight down.

The formation couldn’t do anything before this spear. It penetrated the arrays instantly and caused a rain of blood and screams.

The branches then pierced through the opponents’ chest. Countless bodies were skewered together.

Many people vomited after seeing so many bodies in the sky. This was a ruthless killing.

Next, the branches shuddered and all of the bodies fell down into the ocean. In just a short period, so many bodies floated on the surface. The spectators felt their scalp tingling watching this scene. No one dared to make a sound due to being completely horrified.

“The terra is done for.” After a long time, someone finally commented.

A place praised to be impregnable even by emperors had turned to ashes. A legend has ended today. Quite a shocking turn of event!

In just one day, Li Qiye has destroyed the Spirit Abyss, Dream Empyrean, Roaring Conch, and the Ancestral Terra. After this battle, everyone could only kneel before him. No one would dare to lift their head or walk proudly in front of him, regardless of how strong they might be.

“Clang!” The branches nailed themselves to the ground followed by a series of explosions. One could see their treasures being dragged out. Mountains and springs, as well as fields and treasures, were all taken by Li Qiye.

Generations of accumulation made the terra full of treasures. All of that has become Li Qiye’s personal possession.

Everyone watched but no one dared to have a single thought of greed. To be frank, even if a single coin of Li Qiye fell on the ground, no one would dare to pick it up. Everyone knew that opposing him would invite a sect-destroying disaster!

“Xiong Qianbei, heed my call!” He spoke again.

Very few have heard of this name in Heaven Spirit. They were curious about the reason why he called out this name.

In an inconspicuous sea realm in this world, an old man hurriedly flew to the sky and prostrated. He was pale with fright and spoke with trepidation: “Your, your servant is here, please give the order, Your Majesty.”

He almost pissed his pants and didn’t even have the courage to raise his head.

“Boom!” A huge branch from the sky took down a corner of the terra and threw it towards the sea. Li Qiye said: “Take it, this land is yours now.”

“Your Majesty, your servant, servant was blind and didn’t know that you are the contemporary Immortal emperor. I was foolish

and blinded by greed. An ant like myself wouldn't, wouldn't dare to negotiate with you, Your Majesty." He finally understood who he was making a deal with in the past!

At this particular juncture, he wouldn't dare to talk with Li Qiye about conditions even if he was a hundred times more courageous. If Li Qiye wanted something, he would hand it over without a hesitation!

He was afraid of Li Qiye becoming angry. This was someone who could annihilate his clan and race. At that moment, he would be the sinner of the Xiong Clan!

"Take it, my words are made of gold and shall be carried out." Li Qiye said slowly.

"Thank you, Your Majesty. The Xiong Clan will never forget your kindness." Qianbei didn't dare to refuse an imperial order so he immediately bowed his head more than ten times while being scared out of his wits!

# Chapter 1534: All Races Trembled

---

The verdant tree covered all of Heaven Spirit as if it was the real ruler. All other creatures seemed so tiny beneath its shadow, not worth mentioning at all.

People could only look up to this tree with fear in their mind. Any existence would feel that they couldn't reach the apex, completely helpless.

For example, All-Martial General also shared this same sentiment with a tinge of powerlessness. He wasn't even an ant compared to this verdant tree.

In the past, he didn't understand why his princess supported Li Qiye so much. She even felt that it was natural for him to sit above a sea god.

But now, it was all clear. He felt that her choice was quite insightful and visionary.

He has destroyed the Ancestral Terra even before becoming an Immortal Emperor. Then what about after his ascension...

Just thinking of that made the general shudder. Li Qiye was already frightening enough now. After becoming emperor, the general could only describe Li Qiye with one moniker - Eternal Prime Emperor!

In fact, he wasn't the only one with this thought. Many experts at the pinnacle of Heaven Spirit were trembling as well.

Before shouldering the Heaven's Will, this was his capability. After becoming emperor, they would be insects before him!

"The greatest emperor of all time!" One invincible master gently sighed. This was perhaps inevitable in the future.

All existences were nervous with fear. Some were forced on the ground while shaking in Heaven Spirit.

Three great powers have been destroyed and even the famous impregnable Ancestral Terra couldn't escape this fate.

Just thinking about Li Qiye's ferocious method to uproot the three ancestral trees made everyone shudder. Some even lost control of their bowel movement.

Many people in the future would wake up in the middle of the night due to seeing the nightmarish scene of today!

How could anyone ever forget three ancestral trees being forcibly uprooted? This merciless scene has imprinted itself into everyone's memories for the rest of their lives.

"Anyone else wants to take me on?" His voice echoed again. Though no one could see him, they could feel his gaze sweeping by all of Heaven Spirit to their horror.

Even the strongest masters didn't dare to face him at this moment.

Thus, he turned his gaze towards the Bonesea. His eyes became extremely profound.

"Come out and fight?" A second challenge echoed and terrified the crowd.

Of course, he wasn't challenging the experts of this world since he was aiming for the Bonesea.

However, it was completely silent as if no creature has heard his words. No one answered his challenge.

"Your Majesty, please recall your technique." The frightened people of this world directly called him king now. They prostrated and hoped that he would recall his power.

In fact, all of the cultivators here misunderstood him and thought that he was challenging Heaven Spirit's inhabitants.

Even the invincible masters began to flee without saying goodbye to anyone.

Of course, no one in Heaven Spirit was worthy of fighting him. Only the Bonesea was a challenge at this moment.

But its lack of response made Li Qiye look away. He darted towards Godhalt in a very mysterious location.

It was a gaze capable of crossing through time and everything in this world. At this moment, he was illuminating that location.

“Looks like it is giving up completely, which necessitates finding a completely new method.” He slowly spoke while fixating in this place.

There was no response or reaction either. The place was still mysterious and normal looking. No one would give it a second glance outside of Li Qiye!

He eventually retracted his gaze as well.

“I want a fight but unfortunately, they all want to hide with their tail tucked between their legs. What a shame.” His words resounded sonorously across the world, robbing its inhabitants of their colors.

“Boss, who would dare to fight you now? Please, recall your power already.” Some of the bowing crowd couldn’t help but beg.

Emperor Assailants were running away as well while thinking that Li Qiye was asking for more opponents.

At this key juncture, no one dared to oppose him, let alone fighting him. Even assailants would be slaughtered by him since the three ancestral trees failed as well.

This misunderstanding wasn’t resolved in the end.

“A pity.” In the end, he could only sigh since he couldn’t do anything if the Bonesea and the Divine Tree Ridge chose against coming into being.

“Whoosh!” As the crowd was trembling in fear, the verdant tree blotting out the world suddenly disappeared with a loud noise. A

boundless green radiance fell upon Heaven Spirit. These green wisps fluttered downward, creating a beautiful and dreamy spectacle.

With this tree gone, many experts stare back towards the Divine Tree Ridge. They found that it was finally back to its original position of stretching through Godhalt. It was still one of the twelve burial grounds as if nothing has happened.

People rubbed their eyes and felt that this was only a dream. One expert even told the person next to him: “Hey, pinch my thigh.”

The pain told him that it wasn’t a dream! Of course, this was obvious looking at the destroyed great powers as well. The ultimate massacre just now was indeed reality.

Though it was over, a somber serenity overwhelmed Heaven Spirit for a long while. Experts and lineages didn’t dare to voice their opinion. To embellish the atmosphere a little, one could even say that no one dared to breathe loudly.

The cultivators in this world chose to hide in their home instead of showing their face. The battle today has shattered their courage. A few masters who just got out of their coffins immediately crawled back in.

“Be smart and tuck your tail in this generation, do not cause trouble!” Some Emperor Assailants even warned their descendants before running back to their lairs.

Li Qiye returned to his Tetra-war Bronze Chariot and casually threw the ancient jade from the Dream Empyrean and the primordial weapon of the abyss at Su Yonghuang.

“Try your best researching these two items. It will be very beneficial.” He said lightly.

“For me? I have treasures already.” She found this surprising.

Though she didn’t know why these two treasures were amazing, they were definitely extraordinary since they were the defining

artifacts of the abyss and empyrean.

“Your main treasure belongs to the Su Clan so place it back into the old temple. These two treasures, on the other hand, shall go on conquest with you.” He knew what she was referring to.

When he gave the old treasure to the Su Clan back then, it was to protect them. Thus, after Su Yonghuang found it again, he still hoped that it could stay in their old temple so continue protecting them. He owed them this much.

Yonghuang quietly puts away the two treasures. Li Qiye had so many treasures so he must have his reasons for giving these two to her, she felt.

# Chapter 1535: See You Again, Young Master

---

This was an unprecedented aftermath in Heaven Spirit. In the past, regardless of the victor after a great battle, it would become the topic of the streets and teahouses.

However, the abnormal part was the unwillingness to discuss this battle. The majority of the sects fell into silence with their members all in hiding. Moreover, these sects were under strict vigilance, not allowing anyone to cause trouble or leave the gate.

It can be said that this quiet period was the most peaceful time in Heaven Spirit's history. In the past, even during the most prosperous and tranquil generation, there would always be conflicts and skirmishes between powers due to the sheer size of Heaven Spirit.

However, in just virtually one night, everyone started playing nice like obedient children. Of course, docility wasn't the reason. It was because they were frightened out of their mind from yesterday.

Some found themselves trembling with fear yesterday and nightmare disturbed their sleep. Trepidation and prudence became the norm.

Such deathly stillness made the reclusive old man residing about the clouds laughed: "There hasn't been a massacre like this in a while now. Only when that damned crow does something like this would those uppity juniors know how to act and realize what kind of primordial monster they're facing!"

The old man wasn't surprised at all about this massacre. He has predicted that Li Qiye would do something big after coming back. This was the reason why he didn't allow for the kids from his Giant Dragon Kingdom to come out. Once they offended a character like the Dark Crow, even if Li Qiye were to give him some face, he would still peel their skin. A capital punishment

could be forgiven but he wouldn't let them live too easily!

\*\*\*

On True Martial Island, the wind gently fluttered by creating a scenic charm.

At this moment, Li Qiye and Tantai Ruonan were standing on a cliff to look at the open sea with their hands clasped together. The two didn't say anything and only enjoyed the beautiful incoming waves.

He eventually sighed softly and broke the silence.

"This might be your last time watching the tides with me, young master." She said.

Li Qiye had a slightly sad expression without responding. In fact, he didn't know when they will be able to meet again. Perhaps this would be their final meeting. This wasn't his first separation since people came and went in his millions of years. Some were resting underground; some chose to never come out again; others were eternally separated by distance...

His stoic manner and emotionless heart were the results of these separations. It wasn't because of personality or cruelty; this stemmed from a helplessness of eternal life.

He would continue to live on while those next to him left one by one. Moreover, his path was still long with many goals. There was no resting, halting, or looking back!

He replied softly: "I am an irresponsible master. You have always accompanied as a friend but I can't stay behind for you."

She immediately embraced him tightly by the waist. He returned the passionate gesture.

"No." She said: "Young master, it isn't your fault. No one in this world is worth for you to break your eternal path, not me either. You will keep going until the final battle at the end of the world.

This is your pursuit and dream. That's my young master, only someone like that is worthy of my old effort and company in the past. Plus, your resilience and persistence gave me courage and determination. Even when you are gone, you will always live in my heart."

They hugged each other even tighter. They knew that another meeting in the future might be a fool's hope. It seemed as if they were one and could hear each other's heartbeat. Outside of this sound, there was nothing else in the world.

"See you, young master." She whispered in his ear after a long while.

"See you, Ruonan." He responded melancholically with a quiet mumble. Even an emotionless being like him fell into a daze.

Finally, he let go and left quickly without looking back at her. As he made his departure, he didn't realize that her eyes have become moist.

She watched him leave until he disappeared into the horizon before closing her eyes and the tears finally flowed down from the corners.

"Young master, live on. I know you will win, you will..." She murmured to herself.

She couldn't possibly know the result of the final battle in the future. However, she was certain of his victory because her young master would always stand back up. Even if he were to fall into a bottomless abyss, he would climb back out again to sweep across the world.

This was her young master, her man; one who would never give up regardless of the outcome!

The island finally disappeared into the vast ocean. No one would see it again as it waited for the right time to make an entrance!

Li Qiye didn't return to the Mortal Emperor World right away

after leaving the island. He brought Su Yonghuang to the Seven Martial Pavilion instead.

In the past, he has made a deal with them. He would replenish the Hallowed Ancestor's life while they would take him to see the Prime Sea God.

They traveled through the domains to reach the pavilion.

This was the strongest lineage of the sea demon race, their beacon of light. It has produced three sea gods.

All along, it had many geniuses and experts. People in Heaven Spirit didn't only love talking about the sea gods but also their wondrous technique, the seven grand styles.

Of course, their knowledge was limited to the legends. In fact, few have actually see the styles themselves, including the disciples from the sect.

This wasn't strange at all. For millions of years, the ones who have actually learned all seven were very rare. Hallowed was one of them.

The pavilion's territory was immense and prosperous. The architectures here were numerous and immersed in a faint mist.

People would think that they have arrived at a reclusive paradise after seeing the visual phenomena found in this place, not one of the strongest powers of the sea demon race.

The most distinguished member of the pavilion, the Hallowed Ancestor, personally greeted Li Qiye. His status wasn't only prestigious in the pavilion but throughout all of Heaven Spirit.

However, this gray-haired man immediately kneeled after seeing Li Qiye and said respectfully: "Your Excellency, please forgive me for not being able to greet you earlier."

Li Qiye smiled after seeing this scene: "Hallowed, you live up to your name, different from ordinary men. If you refer to me by this

title, then you know of my identity.”

“Your Excellency.” Even the supreme ancestor didn’t dare to stand up at this moment. It wasn’t because of his early destruction of those other lineages, more so because of his true identity.

Others weren’t aware but he has found out at this moment. Thus, how could he dare to show any slight at this moment?

## Chapter 1536: Seven Martial Pavilion

---

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve while looking at the prostrating ancestor: “Rise, I’m here to complete the transaction with you.”

Hallowed was halfway up but after hearing the full sentence, his legs turned weak so he kneeled again and hurriedly said: “Your Excellency, this lowly one was blind before like a frog under the well. I didn’t know that you have personally arrived in Heaven Spirit. Trying to make a deal with you was a momentary lapse of propriety. Please forgive this ignorant one. I don’t dare to trouble you with this life replenishment matter.”

Since he didn’t know about Li Qiye’s identity before, he tried to negotiate with the guy. But now, with this knowledge in mind, who would dare to negotiate with the eternal dark hand? Even emperors would have to take the long way around, others weren’t qualified to do so. He was no exception either.

“I’ve always been a man of my words.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve again: “If I have agreed to replenish your life, I shall do so.”

“Your Excellency, I won’t ever forget your grace.” The frightened ancestor finally heaved a sigh of relief and bowed again.

“I’ll lead the way for you.” He said with reverence after standing up.

Li Qiye nodded: “Very well, I haven’t visited your pavilion in a while, it’s a good time to see its pretty sceneries.”

The Hallowed Ancestor quickly told the Seven Martial Goddess standing next to him: “Pavilion Lord, Miss Su isn’t familiar with our home so why don’t you show her around?”

Though he lacked a clear understanding of Li Qiye, he has heard of some legends before. Because of this, he didn’t wish for a third party during their conversation.

The goddess took Su Yonghuang away to fulfill her role as a good

host.

“Your Excellency, please come in.” The ancestor became Li Qiye’s guide.

He entered the pavilion and took his time appreciating the beautiful sceneries with the ancestor. It was quite vast and magnificent all around with ethereal mists and clouds. The mountains and rivers were flourishing just like a land of immortals. Anyone would forget their way home from loving it so much. There was no rush to meet the Prime Sea God at all.

Today, the entire sect was very quiet with virtually no ordinary disciples around. Even the experts were nowhere to be found, only the ancestors showed themselves.

This was because the Hallowed Ancestor ordered specifically for the disciples to cultivate in isolation since Li Qiye was coming. He was afraid that some disciples might not know the immensity of the heaven and earth. If they were to annoy Li Qiye, then the pavilion would face a great disaster. Even the Ancestral Terra was annihilated and their sect wasn’t that much stronger than the terra. An angry Li Qiye might mean an unavoidable doom.

Moreover, he has heard that the eternal dark hand didn’t like others talking about him, especially about his past. Because of this, he was afraid of the disciples being too curious and think about a few things. That would lead to more trouble.

The entire pavilion was open for him including the forbidden and secret locations. The ancestor understood that if Li Qiye wanted to go somewhere, no one would be able to stop him anyway. Since he could come and go as he please, it would look better for them to open the entire sect to him.

Hallowed took him to many places unavailable to the protectors and elders as his guide without holding back. Eventually, the two of them reached the highest peak overlooking all of the magnificent sceneries of the sect.

Li Qiye took in the scene and eventually said: “The Seven Martial Pavilion is a treasure ground. Prime was very insightful indeed and has expended painstaking effort to create the sect here.”

“Our descendants are blessed today due to the protection of the progenitor and the wise sages.” Hallowed hurriedly answered: “Everything here was left behind for us already. Alas, we of the future generations are incompetent and can’t make it even stronger.”

Li Qiye glanced at him and said: “Don’t worry, I don’t have any desire towards your pavilion but I do know that your sect has accumulated more than enough power with no lack of treasuries and resources.”

Being revealed by Li Qiye left Hallowed with a red complexion. He smiled wryly in response: “It’s all due to our progenitor, including the current shielding situation. We are simply reaping the benefits of having a golden spoon.”

“While it’s true that he has performed the overarching shielding plan for the sect, the current accumulation and power of the sect aren’t all due to him. This takes many generations and part of it is because of your contribution.” Li Qiye said flatly.

“This lowly one didn’t do much at all, can’t reach the apex and can’t get into your sight, Your Excellency.” Hallowed humbly responded with haste.

“No need to be humble. The hidden resources are quite incredible at this moment but I don’t care for this particular inheritance, don’t worry.” Li Qiye reiterated nonchalantly.

“Ah, just a bit of resource, not enough to impress you at all, Your Excellency.” Hallowed smiled hollowly.

Despite being very famous in Heaven Spirit, the pavilion maintained a low-key presence. This wasn’t to say that they didn’t bother with worldly affairs or chose a reclusive way of life. It was

because they rarely took in guests.

Any other powerful sea god's lineage would be quite eventful and crowded. There would be great fanfare after the birth of a sea god since they would accept the tributes from sea demons everywhere.

Alas, the pavilion didn't do so. Only extremely important people could visit this sect as a guest. They also rarely took in tributes or meeting requests from other sea demons. Most people in Heaven Spirit, especially the sea demons, found this quite peculiar.

Ordinary people couldn't see it but not Li Qiye. The pavilion's ancestral ground was completely hidden by an extremely heaven-defying method.

On the surface, the pavilion wasn't different from the other sea god's lineages. However, it was hiding many things that couldn't be seen from the outside. One had to enter before discovering these hidden matters. Of course, only someone of Li Qiye's level would be able to see through the true mysteries once inside.

Such concealment had no effect on Li Qiye even if Hallowed tried to.

"There's a reason why your progenitor has the title, Prime." Li Qiye uttered slowly: "Even though he started later compared to the Roaring Conch's progenitor, his outstanding vision wasn't something the Roaring Conch's progenitor could compare to. Even before becoming a sea god, he already had plans. Despite failing to make a choice like the others, he still left behind a backup plan for your pavilion or even the entire sea demon race."

He continued: "But as for that Roaring Conch Sea God? His choice might have added some advantages but it came from a self-serving intent."

"Well..." Hallowed became frightened and whispered: "Your Excellency, is this the right place to discuss this?" With that, he secretly pointed up above.

Li Qiye smiled in response: “Don’t worry, spying is possible in the past but now, I actually want to see it happen. If they dare to come out, I shall fight but if they continue hiding, there’s nothing I can do even if I want to initiate a war.”

Hallowed was scared out of his mind after hearing this secretive topic. He couldn’t help but steal glances at the sky and was a bit afraid of a pair of eyes suddenly opening above.

After all, his sect has been hiding many things. In fact, this has been the case for three generations of sea gods.

Nevertheless, he understood that the eternal dark hand had no fear of anything. If someone actually dared to meet the challenge, a war will ensue to the bitter end.

Hallowed wouldn’t dare to conjecture on the final victor but Li Qiye as the dark hand had absolute confidence. Of course, this would mean that the disaster would come early.

# Chapter 1537: Current Situation

---

After Li Qiye's comment, Hallowed became quiet. He has personally trained two sea gods before so he knew more compared to others. Alas, he preferred to not talk about certain topics. However, it was different for a character of Li Qiye's level.

After a long time, he said quietly: "Your Excellency, there's no dodging this disaster?"

"No." Li Qiye chuckled: "You know full well that it is inevitable and is coming even faster than your imagination."

The ancestor's heart sank after hearing this. He was only holding onto a sliver of hope that the disaster might not come. But Li Qiye was the speaker now and destroyed his last hope. He knew that relying on this minuscule chance was simply daydreaming, not realistic at all.

The confirmation coming from anyone else, even a sea god, could be wrong. But this time, it came from the eternal dark hand. Thus, it was absolute with no room for error.

Li Qiye gazed far away and said slowly: "The chance is very low in this generation but it shall come in the next with an unprecedented swiftness!"

"Next generation?" Hallowed shuddered. In fact, he has not prepared well enough. Neither did his sect.

"As you can see, when I controlled the Divine Tree Ridge, there was no reaction from Heaven Spirit. The Bonesea and the ridge itself didn't retaliate. Reviving the tree back to its peak form was a direct provocation towards them but they didn't do anything." He explained.

Hallowed was aghast after realizing something: "They're accumulating more power, biding for the right time."

"That's right." Li Qiye replied: "As the saying goes, one must

endure the trivial things in order to carry out the grand scheme. They chose to keep quiet against my challenge because they are waiting instead of ruining their eternal plan from a momentary lapse of judgment.”

Hallowed began to panic. This disaster was coming too fast while his pavilion wasn't completely ready. How could the eggs be safe when the nest is broken? When that day comes, their pavilion won't be able to escape the same fate either!

Hallowed pondered for a bit before asking: “Your Excellency, if you participate, how will the war go?”

“What do you mean? Fighting against the Bone Sea?” He chuckled and said leisurely.

“Well... yes.” The old man smiled wryly and stared surreptitiously at the sky again.

“With my state two days ago when I control the Divine Tree Ridge at its highest power and with all of my methods, so what if the Bonesea wants to fight? As long as the ridge itself doesn't interfere, I'll show the Bonesea what a real heavy price is!”

He grinned and continued: “If I truly want to go to war, as long as I have enough time and not caring about the cost, I'll make the two of them submit right there!” His gaze turned cold after this declaration.

“But you sea demons, treants, and even the charming spirits, are you worth my paying an immeasurable price?” He glanced over at the ancestor: “If this was me in the past, I wouldn't look twice even if you sea demons are slaughtered and would give no shit to the death of the charming spirit race!”

Hallowed understood his intention. After all, the guy was a human. Moreover, even if humans were to stand in his way, the eternal dark hand would slay them mercilessly anyway. A human like him wouldn't care about the well-being of the sea demons.

Moreover, this was a race who has opposed him repeatedly. To be frank, it would be a kind gesture from him to not applaud and cheer during their destruction.

“The Bonesea and the Divine Tree Ridge are indeed capable of causing the nine heavens and ten earths to tremble. Even emperors can’t do anything to them. But they have been very smart all of this time to never provoke me!” Li Qiye smiled faintly.

“They aren’t your enemies, Your Excellency. According to the rumors, you have a grand goal at the end of the world...” The old man hesitated before finally revealing what was on his mind.

“Deep Blue Sea God must have told you. If I’m not mistaken, he has asked emperors about the matters above the nine heavens.” Li Qiye replied amusingly.

“Yes.” Hallowed nodded his head.

Li Qiye paused for a bit before accepting: “That’s right, the end of the world awaits me since I shall wage my war there!”

Of course, he has left behind hidden plans. He didn’t wish to use them because they are meant for the final war. Even when the Black Dragon King suggested that he used them on the Immortal Demon Grotto, he still refused.

In his eyes, the grotto wasn’t his goal, at least not the ultimate one. There were many methods to deal with the grotto as long as he wanted to. However, there was only one way to take care of what lies at the end of the world - fighting to the very end!

Once the war started, there was no turning back and he would only have one chance as well.

Hallowed didn’t blame Li Qiye. After all, the three races’ fate, as well as Heaven Spirit, had nothing to do with him.

“However, all of you still have a chance.” Li Qiye smiled: “Look, I am here to talk to your Prime Sea God. I shall make an exception this time and give the charming spirit a treasure.”

“The charming spirit?” Hallowed was surprised.

Li Qiye looked at him and said: “Who if not the charming spirit, you sea demons? What do you think carries a higher worth, the Maelstrom or the Bonesea?”

“The Maelstrom!” He inadvertently blurted. Despite being a sea demon, he knew more after listening to the sea gods.

“If I was a betting man, I would bet on the charming spirit as well.” Hallowed smiled wryly after his wits returned.

“The rest is up to the Divine Tree Ridge. If it is willing to break the balance and be on the same side as the Maelstrom, then the disaster will end early. But if not, then there is still a sixty to seventy percent chance of Heaven Spirit surviving. This is all I can do for this world.” He smiled faintly.

He then stared over towards Godhalt. After making such a big commotion and even controlling the tree itself, there was no reaction from the ridge itself. This made his plan fail since he simply wanted to talk with it!

After hearing him, Hallowed became jolted and quickly prostrated again and bowed his head fiercely: “Your Excellency, you are the savior of our world, of our sea demon race, of all existences. If we could help you in any way with our little power, we are willing to jump into the fire...”

The ancestor was ecstatic and grateful! The world might not know that their destiny could possibly be changed with a single thought from Li Qiye.

He knew that this could save the entire world, allowing them to survive this disaster. It wasn't an exaggeration to call him a world savior. However, Li Qiye who has brought dawn to Heaven Spirit never called himself a savior. His action wasn't predicated on seeking a repayment from the inhabitants of this world. This action was quite benevolent and altruistic in the ancestor's

opinion.

“Rise. I am no savior. I am only lending a hand this time not for the races or Heaven Spirit itself, only because of a few people.” Li Qiye answer emotionlessly.

Though he didn't take the credit and acted indifferently, the ancestor still had infinite gratitude and continued to bow his head. He knew that an eternal existence like Li Qiye didn't need the world to repay him.

“Take me to the shadow council.” Li Qiye spoke after the ancestor stood up: “It is time for me to speak to Prime's group.”

# Chapter 1538: Shadow Council

---

There was an extremely hidden area of the pavilion with many sealing laws and empowerments. This made it impregnable like a fortress. Moreover, all of these spells came from sea gods and not just three or five of them.

Few disciples knew about this place. For example, ordinary ancestors weren't qualified to be aware of this place. Furthermore, because it was classified as a top secret location, only Hallowed was allowed to enter. Even the Seven Martial Goddess who knew the seven styles didn't have this privilege.

Only by becoming a sea god would she be granted entry and be privy to the true secrets in this place.

This practice wasn't because Hallowed was selfish but it was due to the grave importance of this matter relating to the life-and-death of the pavilion or even all of the sea demons. Once someone else caught wind of it, the consequence would be unimaginable so Hallowed was very cautious about it.

After taking Li Qiye here, he stood outside and told the guy: "Your Excellency, I can only bring you here and have no say in the actual negotiation itself."

Even though he was the only person who knew about this secret in the present era, he wasn't qualified to interfere. Only sea gods and above could talk and discuss it!

"I know, I'll be fine alone." Li Qiye chuckled and leisurely strolled into the area.

With the first step, a buzz came about with a flashing light. He disappeared in the next moment without a trace. This type of disappearance didn't look like a teleportation at all.

In the next second, he appeared in an exceedingly mysterious area. No one could spy or enter without permission. Its

coordinates were cryptic as well, unbeknownst to outsiders.

One would find a river of twinkling stars in the sky. It looked quite beautiful as if jewels were embedded up above. There were also strange gravels everywhere to make up the river on top of astral vortexes.

A platform floated in this space with a roundtable. There were shades sitting there with their aura converged. However, their style and posture alone showed that when these shades were still in the world, they were supreme existences capable of sweeping through the land!

Li Qiye chuckled and said casually: “The shadow council, quite secretive indeed. Looks like many sea gods have joined now.”

The shades turned to look at him. Despite not being the true body of sea gods, their glare was still quite frightening. A Nine World’s Godking would find their legs becoming soft being the center of so many eyes.

However, Li Qiye was still as nonchalant as ever. He dragged a chair over and sat down coolly.

“Your Excellency, I have been a fan of you long ago.” Eventually, one of the shades spoke. His voice was imposing despite the low volume. Nevertheless, it also soothed the soul and gave a safe feeling.

“Yes, it’s me.” Li Qiye looked at the shade and smiled: “It looks like there was a meeting here as well before wanting to meet me, Prime.”

The speaker was the Prime Sea God. Of course, his true body was no longer in this world. This was the case for all the sea gods.

Nevertheless, many sea gods still participated at this shadow council all along. It was considered the highest secret of the sea demon race. Because of its importance, its formation and goals were carefully guarded. Not all new sea gods were eligible to learn

of this secret!

“We had to be cautious before knowing that it was you, Your Excellency Dark Crow. After being reported by Hallowed, we had a deliberation and True Martial confirmed it. That’s how we figured out your identity.” Prime slowly explained.

In fact, Hallowed couldn’t decide a meeting with Prime and the council. However, he reported the stories to them so the council decided to meet with Li Qiye.

“Your Excellency, long time no see. Our real bodies aren’t in the world anymore so we can’t greet you in full.” Another heavyweight at the table slightly bowed towards Li Qiye and spoke: “I didn’t think you would be interested in our council. In the past, you have never intervened.”

Of course, this speaker was True Martial Sea God.

Li Qiye glanced at him and smiled while shaking his head: “No, I’m not interested in your council at all. I’m simply here to make a deal.”

“May I ask what kind of deal you want to make, Your Excellency?” Another shade asked. This shade resembled a bottomless ocean. He was the second sea god of the pavilion, Deep Blue!

“Before talking about the deal, let us speak about the purpose of the council. If our goals don’t align, then we can’t come to an agreement.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

The atmosphere became serious. The sea gods present held their breath and didn’t say anything.

“There’s no need to hide.” Li Qiye continued carefreely: “Then I’ll talk. The purpose of the shadow council is to deal with the Bonesea!”

All eyes slightly moved after hearing this. Despite not being their real bodies, just a shift of their glare alone contained a mighty

power.

“We are seeking out all the possibilities so that the sea demon race can survive during the advent of the disaster.” Prime solemnly said.

“If you can’t give me a clear answer, then we have nothing to talk about.” Li Qiye shook his head; “If you really wish for your race to survive, then you should be beseeching me, not the other way around.”

The sea gods around the table exchanged glances. They were very cautious.

“I can vouch for His Excellency.” In the end, True Martial broke the silence in a dignified manner.

Prime took a deep breath and began: “Your Excellency, you are the eternal overlord so I’m sure we can’t hide it from you either. Yes, I created the shadow council with such a thought in mind. However, the original intention was only to maintain some initiatives in the ordeal.”

“I understand, despite being sea gods and making a compromise once with the Bonesea, all of you don’t necessarily trust it. Because of this, you made some preparation before dying.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

With that, he peered around at each sea god and continued: “I’m not looking down on everyone here. If you were all alive and your real bodies were preserved until now, then yes, with everyone here, there is a chance that you might be able to oppose the Bonesea. But the current you won’t do. With your current state, how much strength can you actually exert when the time comes?”

The sea gods here had no response. They naturally understood this full well.

He continued on: “That’s why there are still some methods left. I can also guess what they are, so we’ll talk about that.”

“What is your wish, Your Excellency?” True Martial spoke again.

“I don’t want anything.” Li Qiye shook his head: “On the contrary, I came here bearing good news and hope, a light of dawn for everyone!”

“You mean?” The group was startled after hearing this.

“Yes, I came with good news. But first, I’ll reveal something. The disaster will come much earlier than your expectation, within one generation!”

“So early?!” Even True Martial was caught off guard.

The sea gods looked around at each other. They have experienced countless storms and danger but they still shuddered after hearing this. Everyone had a serious expression now.

# Chapter 1539: An Ambitious Strategy

---

Prime's group knew more information and understood what the disaster would entail.

"Your Excellency, what do you mean? Are you talking about the Bonesea, the Maelstrom, or the Divine Tree Ridge?" One of the sea gods spoke.

"Do you still not see clearly? In your eyes, the Bonesea is what you worry about. Moreover, the three have always maintained a state of balance so when the disaster comes, what will happen should be clear." Li Qiye couldn't help but smile.

The sea gods here didn't respond but they agreed with his comment.

"Then what good news do you bring us, Your Excellency?" Prime took a deep breath and asked.

"Congratulation, everyone should be happy that I finally want to interfere with this matter with my bet on the charming spirit race, like I have said earlier." Li Qiye said with a smile.

The expression of the sea gods became much better. They knew just how significant the moment someone of Li Qiye's level wanted to get involved! This was an eternal overlord, capable of slaughtering the Ancient Ming!

"Your Excellency, you are the savior and guardian of the nine worlds..." True Martial hurriedly said with excitement.

"Stop." Li Qiye interrupted him: "True Martial, don't flatter me so fast. First, I'm not a savior or a guardian. If the world wants to give me a moniker, I feel that 'Butcher of the Nine Worlds' fits me more. Of course, I personally like the title of 'Dark Hand behind the Curtain'."

True Martial could only smile wryly at the humorous response.

“Will you declare war, Your Excellency?” It was Deep Blue’s turn to ask.

“No.” Li Qiye shook his head and said: “Two days ago, I actually tried to provoke them so that Heaven Spirit would be warmed up before the disaster. Unfortunately, both the Bonesea and the ridge ignored me. But of course, don’t think that I’ll be staying here to fight.”

“You mean...?” Prime asked for clarification.

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “Heaven Spirit doesn’t have much to do with me so frankly, I won’t be staying here and fight for its sake. However, I have made some preparations, not because I’m merciful. It is only that there are a few people and matters worthy of me doing something.”

“Could you be more specific in your future assistance?” Deep Blue asked.

“Not me.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Like I said earlier, I won’t be here when the disaster comes. However, I made some plans at the Bonesea and the Maelstrom themselves.”

“The Maelstrom might not necessarily stand with the charming spirits.” True Martial stated his concern.

“Don’t worry, the darkness at the bottom of the Maelstrom won’t be able to do anything. Plus, I’m not betting on the ants down there anyway.” Li Qiye continued: “If you want assurance from me, so be it. I can guarantee that when you all fight against the Bonesea, someone who can actually withstand it in a direct confrontation will step up to the battlefield!”

“A direct confrontation?” The sea gods were shocked. They understood the meaning behind such a feat and just how powerful such an existence would be.

“Of course, I left behind far more than just that.” He said flatly: “Thus, if you wish to win the war and for Heaven Spirit to exist

afterward with your sea demon descendants alive, you must pay a great price!”

They exchanged glances at this moment before making up their mind. Prime was the negotiator: “What is your condition, Your Excellency?”

“I don’t want anything but a promise from all of you. At the start of the war, you must be on our side. Moreover, that is the time for you to sacrifice yourselves.”

Having said that, he became serious: “This long-lasting shadow council must have been the place for many discussions about methods of resistance. At that time, I’m sure you will know what to do!”

True Martial was next to speak: “To be perfectly candid, Your Majesty, we have indeed discussed a few methods. However, it is limited and only in theory, we have never actually carried it out. We don’t know which methods are possible.”

“Blood detonation.” Li Qiye slowly said: “All I can suggest is this method. This is the most direct and effective solution.”

Blue Sea pondered for a moment before asking: “Hmm, is that possible?”

“Heaven Spirit, no, all of nine worlds, wouldn’t have something like this.” Li Qiye replied: “it’s just like the immortal beasts, do they really exist in the nine worlds? Of course not. But this doesn’t mean they don’t exist so I can guarantee that this method is the best choice.”

“Has it been done before?” The group was slightly tempted now.

Li Qiye looked at them and explained: “The crucial question now is whether you are willing to pay the price for your race and Heaven Spirit. I know that you have made a deal with the Bonesea before. But now, do you wish to work with me or the Bonesea? Whether it is for your own sake, your descendants, or the sea

demon race, it is your choice now.”

After some wordless deliberation and exchanged glances, all the sea gods solemnly nodded.

Prime spoke: “Your Excellency, we can sacrifice ourselves. The truth is that I wouldn’t have started the shadow council and they wouldn’t have joined if it wasn’t for our descendants and the sea demon race. As long as our race can survive in this disaster, we can end our transaction with the Bonesea. However, we can’t underestimate the Bonesea at all. Even if we could carry out your proposal, I’m afraid it will still be very difficult. You know it well enough. Once it reaches that point, it will have total control.” He gently sighed with the last statement.

“Don’t worry, since I offered a method, I will also have a way to make your blood detonation a success. Don’t forget, this method of mine didn’t come out of thin air. It’s not in theory only.” He assured them with a smile.

The group became spirited after hearing this right away. Prime nodded again: “We are relieved to hear your assurance and shall promise you to work together during the decisive battle!”

Finally, the sea gods and Li Qiye have reached an agreement. Just like Li Qiye has said, this choice of theirs meant personal sacrifices!

Prime pondered for a bit and said: “Your Excellency, I wonder if I should ask you this question or not?”

“Speak.” Li Qiye chuckled while looking at him.

“I heard that you are always confident of victory because you have in your possession a few ultimate artifacts. Even emperors do not have items of this level.” He spoke with uncertainty.

The sea gods here stared at him with anticipation. They rarely made contact with him so they knew nothing about him. Of course, True Martial was the exception.

However, the legends about the dark hand behind the curtain

scared even emperors, let alone them. This made them quite curious about his ultimate means.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Certain ultimate artifacts, right? If I’m not mistaken, True Martial must have told you.”

True Martial coughed and said: “Yes, I blurted it out when discussing different resisting methods. I heard Immortal Emperor Min Ren talked about it before. He said that you still have a few extremely terrifying items, some that could destroy everything. He even went as far as to say that if they existed, only you would have them.”

He felt a bit awkward about it. After all, not everyone was qualified to know these secrets. The consequence would be unimaginable if this rubbed Li Qiye the wrong way.

# Chapter 1540: A World Savior Has Never Existed

---

Li Qiye smiled and said after hearing True Martial: “Min Ren really has a big mouth but he’s right.”

Prime and the others were shaken as they glanced at each other.

Li Qiye took note of their expression and said: “That’s right, I do have a few terrorizing items and enough resources to slay gods and emperors. This is my power, thus, those who want to oppose me must weight their own worth first and see if they are ready to be annihilated by me!”

He uttered such words so casually but when the rest of the group heard the words “slay gods and emperors”, they became quite tense. As sea gods, they knew that the dark hand behind the curtain wasn’t all talk. Moreover, he has done it before!

“I’m sure no wise soul would oppose you, Your Excellency.” True Martial spoke.

Li Qiye continued on: “For me, the disaster isn’t much. If I am willing, I can destroy the Bonesea and the Divine Tree Ridge due to my ample resources. The Trident is amazing, right? I can easily take out three or five treasures at the same level!”

He paused for a moment before continuing: “And yes, Immortal Emperor Min Ren is right about something else. There is one ultimate artifact in the world capable of annihilating all things. Its power is far beyond your imagination. I don’t mind letting you guys know that I do have it in my possession right now!”

The rest was shaken again. Deep Blue had to ask: “How powerful is it, exactly?”

“I can tell you that using it to massacre an Immortal Emperor is too wasteful. In my eyes, even using it to kill the emperors and gods above the nine heavens is still squandering it away.” Li Qiye

took his time making this statement.

Few people knew that he was saving these resources for the final battle! Even emperors weren't worthy of touching this particular arsenal!

The sea gods felt something they haven't felt a long time before, a shuddering chill emanating through their mind. They understood that he was telling the truth. There was no reason for the ruler of the universe and the master of the nine worlds to lie at all.

"So now, you all should know the wise path to take." Li Qiye said flatly: "In your mind, an existence like the Bonesea is your final destination, your ultimate target."

"But for me, the Bonesea and Divine Tree Ridge, as well as the rest of the burial grounds, are only part of my journey; mountains along the way. If I'm willing to pay a great price, they'll be crushed beneath my feet! What are they compared to the end of the world?"

The sea gods were silent. They have only heard stories about the end of the world from a few emperors. Alas, they didn't have a chance to actually see it.

Even one of the greatest sea gods, True Martial, didn't have this opportunity but he did hear Immortal Emperor Min Ren talk about it.

"Your Excellency, you can really destroy the Bonesea?" Prime became serious.

"It's possible but I won't do it. Not unless it declared war against me first." Li Qiye smiled.

"What if you destroy it? Though our true bodies are no longer in this world, we can let the sea demons serve you and give you all of our race's resources!" Prime suggested.

"Prime, your idea isn't bad." Li Qiye shook his head: "But it isn't

worth it for me. The deal is no good. The thing I need can't be given to me by you or the sea demon race. Plus, I don't need your allegiance."

"I was already the ruler of the nine worlds. If I wanted the nine worlds to serve me, I wouldn't need to wait till now. My resources are not meant for the Bonesea, only for the final battle. Plus, I'm not a benevolent person. I won't try to save this world. The life-and-death of the sea demons and the charming spirits have nothing to do with me."

The group naturally got the point. In order to get to their current position, they understood that relying on benevolence and the high heaven couldn't amount anything. Ultimately, one must talk with their fist.

If one could walk this path with kindness, there would be no sea gods and Immortal Emperors in this world. Which of them didn't tread on countless bones? If they didn't do so, they would be the bones paving the route.

"In the end, this world requires all of you to save it. There is no savior in this world, never has. At the very least, I'm not one of them. Only a butcher." Li Qiye slowly said.

"But you have done so before." True Martial blurted: "During the darkest hours of the nine worlds, you guarded it. Otherwise, it would be forever fell into the hands of the Ancient Ming. This is your benevolence, granting salvation to the nine worlds!"

Li Qiye mused for a bit before replying: "Yes, I have guarded this world before. However, it was because the Ancient Mings were invaders in my eyes. They didn't belong to this world and they shouldn't have brought the darkness along with them! But worst of all, they shouldn't have opposed me, that's why I annihilated them."

With that, he spoke to the entire table: "But, all of you know what the Bonesea, Maelstrom and Divine Tree Ridge are. These are

your three races' business so you must be the one taking care of them!"

He spoke coldly: "Just like the Ancient Ming and their darkness, that's why our nine worlds took care of them. During their reign, did immortals above the high heaven come to save the nine worlds? Did the emperors and gods above come? Did the high heaven itself save the nine worlds?"

"No!" Li Qiye's eyes became deep as he continued on: "To the high heaven and what lies above the nine heavens, we are nothing, only a bunch of ants. They gave no shit about the well-being of the nine worlds! Because of this, we had to be the one protecting and saving the nine worlds."

"That's how simple it is. No savior and no guardian. The weak and insignificant existences of the nine worlds must work for their own destiny. They must be the one fighting instead of praying for a savior! If they don't try to save themselves, why should anyone else save them? Kindness and sympathy can only go so far in saving the world; the rest is done by soldiers giving up their lives, wise sages exchanging with their blood!" His words became resoundingly powerful during the speech.

To which the sea gods didn't respond at all for a long time.

Li Qiye ended with a faint smile: "No savior in this world but all of you are the brave soldiers and wise sages of the sea demon race! If your race were to be prosperous in the future, you must pay with your blood and life, not just a simple deal, whether it be with me or the Bonesea. That's only the beginning. There's no getting out of a bigger sacrifice! It's as simple as that."

"Your Excellency's words have shown us the way." Prime solemnly nodded: "We shall use our blood and lives in exchange for our race's future and end this disaster!"

"I know that you will be ready. However, the world won't remember the brave soldiers and the wise sages. They will only

know about an emperor, a random sea god, or even an Emperor Assailant. No one will remember the characters in the background.” He smiled at this point.

“Let them be then. We don’t need them to remember and worship us.” True Martial laughed freely.

“Behind every brilliant daughter is a great father.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but praise.

True Martial only laughed back. In the end, Li Qiye stood up since he has achieved his goal. It was time to leave.

“Your Excellency.” As he was leaving, True Martial suddenly called for him. He pondered for a bit before asking: “How is Ruonan doing?”

Despite no longer being in this world, a father still worried about his daughter all the same.

# Chapter 1541: Time of Departure

---

Li Qiye didn't turn back and chuckled: "She's doing well and is very happy. Like father, like daughter, she is just as great as you so you should feel proud." He left with that.

He didn't tell her the truth because he spent everything to sever her bloodline back then so that she could fly away, far from Heaven Spirit to the edge of the worlds!

Alas, she still chose to return in the end, back to her home. After a full circle, she eventually came back to the beginning. This might not be the result True Martial wanted but Li Qiye still respected her choice.

After all, she had many paths to take including one that would make her an emperor. Nevertheless, she still came back because she loved this land and her father. Thus, she must embark on his unfinished path.

He might not know of his daughter's choice but as Li Qiye has said, he should feel proud of her. She has never faltered before difficult choices and chose to face them head on so she should be his pride.

Behind every brilliant daughter is a great father. This comment was perfectly apt.

He returned to the pavilion afterward and stay there in order to replenish Hallowed's life.

Fortunately, the pavilion has prepared all the necessary alchemy ingredients for the process. This made Li Qiye's life much easier. During the process, many visual phenomena occurred in this sect such as lightning waves all over the sky with rambunctious detonations as if a heavenly tribulation was descending.

This terrible period lasted several days before finally dispersing. The disciples here could finally rest easy.

The ancestors were ecstatic. They understood the significance behind this, a successful life replenishment of their Hallowed Ancestor.

A character like Hallowed was too important to the pavilion. It meant that he could protect them for several more generations!

Li Qiye has done everything he needed after this life replenishment so it was time for him to leave. However, he met the Seven Martial Goddess alone before leaving.

He looked at her and eventually said: "In a short time, your Hallowed Ancestor will tell you something. This means that it won't be long until you become a sea god and the Trident will show up again."

"Really?" The goddess spoke with skepticism: "The Trident didn't appear in the last generation, will it show up this time?"

"That's the last generation." Li Qiye said with a smile: "There was a reason for its disappearance but it shall arrive in this one."

"Why are you so certain?" The goddess curiously asked.

"The need for protection." Li Qiye said with a smile: "This is a very critical period so the Bonesea requires a sea god to protect it until the next generation. Because of my provocation, both the Bonesea and the Divine Tree Ridge feel threatened. So, if they had a sea god or a treefather, they could have one more option."

"Thus, I won't assume anything about a treefather but the Trident will show itself and that is when you show your skills." Li Qiye said solemnly.

She pondered a bit before answering: "Rumor has it that the Trident picks its master, I might not be chosen."

"Aren't you always confident? Why did you lose it all of a sudden?" Li Qiye couldn't help but chuckle.

The goddess smiled wryly back. In the past, she was indeed very

confident. She even thought she could defeat Li Qiye before he truly showed his might and gotten to know him. After all, she has mastered the seven styles. This was why she had immense confidence in her strength in the future.

But now, she had no hope of defeating LI Qiye. Her confidence was not worth mentioning. She understood that she wouldn't have the chance to challenge him in this lifetime.

She has once said that she would challenge him after becoming a sea god. However, she knew that even after becoming one, it was far from enough to defeat him.

“Be confident in yourself.” Li Qiye stated: “Not being able to beat me is not something to be ashamed about. In the nine heavens and ten earths, you won't be the only one who is afraid of me either. Remember, you are one of the few people in the history of the pavilion who have mastered the seven styles. Your future will be brilliant; your achievements could even be on the same level as the Prime Sea God.”

“I understand.” She took a deep breath and stood proudly with her eyes lighting up. The confident goddess has returned again!

“The Trident will pick you.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Even if it doesn't, no big deal, just seize it then. It's not like your pavilion hasn't done this before. Once you could wield it, you will become sea god regardless of whether it picks you or not.”

She solemnly nodded since Li Qiye was right regarding this matter. Their pavilion has done this before. In the past, Deep Blue Sea God actually seized the Trident by force! Moreover, the Hallowed Ancestor was still around in case she needed assistance!

“I have faith in you.” He looked at her and said: “Just work hard and you'll be a sea god. The important part is whether you will be ready after becoming one.”

She calmly met his gaze with her own that seemed to be

illuminating into his mind. After a long time, she nodded: “Don’t worry, I’ll remember you well. If I have made a choice, I shall do it without letting you down.”

“Very good. One day, you will be a hero of the sea demon race, the greatest sea god of them all.” Li Qiye smiled and said while getting ready to leave.

She stopped him: “Young Noble Li.”

Li Qiye slowly replied: “There’s something else?”

“I heard the Hallowed Ancestor said that you’re not just leaving Heaven Spirit?” She hesitated for a moment before speaking.

Li Qiye confirmed: “Yes, when I leave, it won’t just be leaving Heaven Spirit since I’ll be off to a faraway place.”

“Will I be able to say goodbye before you leave?” She eventually stared deeply at him.

“Yes. Don’t forget that you still owe me. In this world, anyone who owes me will have to pay in the end when the time is right.”

The goddess smiled and nodded solemnly: “I will repay what I owe you, Young Noble.”

With that, he turned and left while she watched his departing back until he was out of sight.

Finally, Li Qiye and Su Yonghuang traveled towards the sky. Each of the nine worlds had a gigantic dao platform. It was the portal connecting all of them. However, it was sealed after the Black Dragon King tore apart the Heaven’s Will.

He was thinking of using this dao platform to return to the Mortal Emperor World. However, there was someone quietly waiting for him there. It was a woman with a cold expression, Sima Yujian who has left several days ago.

“Why are you here?” He was surprised to see her.

“I was ordered to follow you, Young Master.” She bowed after

seeing. She was completely different and respectful this time around.

“Young Master?” His eyes became serious as he immediately turned around while being affixed to a certain spot in the sky.

He took a step forward and instantly climbed into the nebula above.

“Come out, there is only one person in the world who has cultivated the Godslaying Dao to this level.” He said slowly.

The nebula was still silent with no one appearing.

“It’s been so many years, Shadowless, but you are still so cautious. I chose you back then precisely because of your prudence.” Li Qiye didn’t blame the guy for not showing up and laughed.

# Chapter 1542: Shadowless

---

A person appeared in this space and kneeled down after hearing Li Qiye: “Your Excellency, it is really you!”

It was a gray old man with muddled eyes just like a mortal. He wore a hemp robe and had an ordinary appearance. No one would take a second look at him in a crowd of people as if he was an old farmer.

Li Qiye smiled and personally helped him up: “Rise, no need for formality.”

After being helped by Li Qiye, the old man carefully stared at Li Qiye with his arms shaking. Tears flowed down from his muddled eyes.

“Your Excellency, I didn’t think I could see you one last time.” He emotionally grabbed Li Qiye’s hands.

“I also didn’t think I could see you again. After the night corps disbanded and the elders went their separate ways, I never heard anything from you guys again.” Li Qiye also became sentimental.

The old man was Shadowless. Not only did he have an ordinary appearance, no one knew his name either. In fact, Li Qiye was the only one who would refer to him as Shadowless in this world.

But who would have thought that this ordinary old man was a terrifying existence during the Ancient Ming Era. Even that ferocious race shuddered when talking about Shadowless.

He was the leader of the Godslaying Night Corps, an assassin under the banner of the Dark Crow, a devil in the guise of the night. He directly reported to Li Qiye while being the supreme leader of his corps.

He carried out Li Qiye’s will including training and maintaining the orders and rules of the corps.

Of course, assassination was included. As long as Li Qiye wanted to kill a big shot from the Ancient Ming, Shadowless would bring the guy's head to Li Qiye!

After the end of that era, his mission was complete and the corps disbanded. From then on, all the assassins disappeared along with Shadowless into the sea of people.

“We have done our job, the nine worlds no longer need the Godslaying Night Corps.” Shadowless quietly said: “Seeing you again, Your Excellency, after so many years of being buried is making me emotional, just like seeing my family again.”

He was an orphan taken in by the Dark Crow and was taught the Godslaying Dao. This resulted in his supreme achievements, allowing him to work as a harbinger of light for the nine worlds.

“It's been so long but none of you have shown up again.” Li Qiye lamented.

The night corps was his capable assistants during the darkest time of the world. Though its inhabitants didn't know of their merits, each assassin in the corps had an indelible contribution in bringing about the Emperors Era.

Unfortunately, Li Qiye never met them again after the disbandment. It was because their missions have been finished. After experiencing the murky and perilous hell, they deserved peace and rest. This was why Li Qiye didn't try to find them.

“Our brothers have disappeared in the river of time, only my old bones are left now.” Shadowless found himself unbecoming of an assassin due to his current rampaging emotions.

“I have mistreated all of you who should be basking in all the glory and fame.” Li Qiye gently sighed.

“Your Excellency, you have never chased after vanity and fame so why should we?” Shadowless replied: “You have blocked the tides and saved the nine worlds. The world didn't create memorials for

you and never praised your grand deeds. But all of that is nothing compared to the price you have paid!”

“I know, but part of the glory should have been yours.” Li Qiye said.

“To be able to contribute under your banner and being part of the night corps is our glory!” Shadowless said solemnly: “Our sacred mission of restoring the nine worlds is our ultimate glory. Without your will, the nine worlds would still be lost in darkness. Even if we were still living as ordinary people, how could we enjoyed a peaceful time?”

“Let’s not talk about the past.” In the end, Li Qiye sighed again and gently fixed Shadowless’ gray hair.

Back when he saw Shadowless for the first time, the guy was only a child with a childish yet unyielding nature. But now, he was a decrepit old man on the verge of death.

Shadowless nodded while holding onto Li Qiye’s hand.

“I saw Yujian this time in Heaven Spirit so I knew right away that the Godslaying Dao still exist. I was happy and satisfied after seeing her.” He said.

Shadowless explained: “The current generation doesn’t need the night corps anymore. It’s just that the juniors want to pass on the dao so they accepted the kid, not wanting for the dao to end with them.”

“Yujian is quite talented and her personality fits the Godslaying Dao. It is indeed a good choice for her to pass it down.” Li Qiye agreed.

“Your Excellency...” Shadowless opened his mouth but hesitated.

“You have followed me for a lifetime, there’s nothing you can’t say.” Li Qiye said: “If you are afraid of me, who else in this world still dare to talk to me?”

“I want Yujian to go with you.” Shadowless said seriously.

Li Qiye replied wryly: “You should and do know that I will be stepping on bones and bathing in blood. There’s no denying that the Godslaying Dao requires blood for mastery but following me isn’t a good thing. The future will be merciless, my enemies are emperors and gods as well as the end of the world. An assassin following me won’t have a good ending.”

He became very earnest after saying this.

“I know.” Shadowless nodded gravely.

Li Qiye continued on: “You should know that when I let the corps go back then, I hope that everyone could spend the rest of their days peacefully. No need to wake up to an overwhelming darkness, no need to lose sleep over murders, no need to rest with your blades, no need to loom in the darkness of the enemy’s camp.”

“After the end of the Ancient Ming Era, all of you are more qualified than anyone else to earn some peace. That’s why I didn’t bother anyone, not wishing to tie you to my chariots again and the eventual restless wars. Both you and your descendants deserve solace.”

“I understand your feelings.” Shadowless said: “Because of that, our descendants can’t follow and work for you. However, Yujian was able to meet you by chance. This is a type of fate just like when I met you back then.”

“I know.” Li Qiye had to smile in the end: “Since you have put it that way, I have to let her stay by my side then. It looks like the Godslaying Dao will have to find another successor.”

Shadowless smiled back: “No one will be more suitable than her. In the future above the nine heavens, she’ll make the dao shine. Its name will resound across the thirteen continents!”

“Your ambition is quite grand.” Li Qiye chuckled: “I’ll promise you, I’ll take her above the nine heavens. As long as she puts in the

effort, the Godslaying Dao will be famous throughout the thirteen continents!”

An old man like Shadowless was laughing like a child at this moment due to overwhelming excitement. He was no longer an assassin, only an ordinary child.

The two of them laughed for a while until they got tired.

“Go, it’s time for me to leave too. No need to see me off, you’re too old now, take better care of yourself.” Li Qiye told Shadowless.

“Your Excellency.” Shadowless had trouble expressing himself again.

“Speak.” Li Qiye replied.

“I was only an orphan back then, straying across the wildlands like a dog, victim to the harsh weathers and fear. I didn’t know when I would be able to find a home. You gave me food and shelter, peace... and a home. Though the training at the corps was the toughest not to mention the life-and-death examinations, the corps was our home, our big family. We never gave up on each other and you never gave up on us. As we trod through the darkness, you have always managed to guide us back. You were quite harsh on us but everyone knew that as long as you were around, we still had hope and our big family would never collapse.”

# Chapter 1543: Entering The Northern Grand Sea

---

At this particular point, Shadowless lowered his head and spoke softly: “You have always been a strict father to us, but we are assassins, we have our mission...”

Li Qiye became a bit sad before eventually say: “I know. You may kneel, I shall allow this since we might not be able to meet again after this.”

It would be a separation between heavens and men after this goodbye so Li Qiye agreed.

“Thump!” Shadowless immediately kneeled solemnly there and bowed his head three times: “Father!”

Li Qiye’s mind shuddered a bit as he closed his eyes and accepted the grand gesture from Shadowless.

Before Shadowless knew it, his eyes were already wet. He also knew that this would be the last time in his life when he could call Li Qiye’s “father”.

Finally, his body flashed into nothingness. For him, the hardest thing in life was saying goodbye!

After a long time, Li Qiye also opened his eyes that were glistening as well. Even his numb heart shuddered a bit.

In the past when he started the Godslaying Corps, Shadowless’ group was only a group of teenage orphans with no home. He took them in and trained them under the harshest regiment for the highest effect. This was him being responsible for their lives. Otherwise, they could have died at any time during the war.

Under his guidance, the innocent children became remarkable killers and eventually, white-haired old men.

During the retirement of the corps, he has personally sent them

off. He was the one who turned children into assassins so he needed to send them away from war.

In his mind, he hoped that they could find peace and rest for the remainder of their lives. Because of this, he didn't try to find them at all lest he would disturb their serenity.

Today, he met Shadowless again. The child was on the verge of death now. He felt his emotionless heart quivering when saying goodbye to Shadowless again. It was as if he was saying farewell to a junior, to his own son. In the future, they would all be buried in the soil.

He finally sighed and his calm gaze returned. He was now his old self, shrouded in indifference again. He was once again the Dark Crow. No need for emotions and sorrow. The grand dao was long and he needed to continue on.

He went back to the dao platform where Su Yonghuang and Sima Yujian were waiting for him.

He looked at Yujian and said: "Do you need to say goodbye to anyone? If so, then go or there won't be a chance later."

Her eyes slightly batted as she stared towards the horizon. In the end, she took a deep breath and said: "I have said my goodbyes and am ready for this."

She knew that she was about to leave Heaven Spirit completely so she had made ample preparation.

"Very well." He continued: "From now on, you will stay by my side. The world in the future will be vast and cruel. Just a single thought could determine life and death. Because of this, your fortune and achievements in the future will rely on your own effort. I can only show you the way."

"I understand." She nodded solemnly. Though she didn't know what Li Qiye had to do with her Godslaying Corps, her ancestor has entrusted her to him. So from now on, she would give him her

all!

“Alright.” Li Qiye told Su Yonghuang: “I’m opening the dao portal to bring the two of you to the Grand Middle Territory. You take her to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

“What about you?” Su Yonghuang was surprised.

He responded: “I need to go to the Grand Sea to personally end a few things. Plus, I still have some items there.”

Su Yonghuang wondered why he had some items in that region. His only connection to the Grand Sea was Zi Cuining.

However, she wouldn’t pry needlessly so she nodded: “Yes, I’ll let the others know too.”

“Whoosh!” He opened the portal and locked onto the coordinates before telling the two: “Get ready. Once you arrive, keep on cultivating hard.”

The two nodded their head and entered the portal.

The nine worlds were sealed so these portals were not connected at all. It was exceedingly difficult to travel between worlds under these circumstances. An ordinary Godking wouldn’t be able to do it with their own strength. Some could do so but an unstable dao portal had many uncertainties and risks.

However, it was too easy for Li Qiye since he cultivated the Space Scripture.

After sending the two girls away, he changed the coordinates and also stepped into the portal for the Grand Sea.

The Northern Grand Sea was one of the five domains in the Mortal Emperor World. It was vast and extremely prosperous.

The place was indeed full of oceans of an incalculable size. However, it was different from Heaven Spirit. There were many islands in this place and they formed chains together on top of the many continents.

The continents floated on this ocean like eternally unsinkable ships!

While standing in the sky of this place, the islands and continents scattered like jewels and gems. Its beauty was beyond description and made people forget their way back home!

After entering this region, Li Qiye was full of thoughts with memories emerging.

He came this time to end a few things. In fact, to be more specific, he came to collect some debts and eliminate a few people from this world. Most importantly, there were a few extremely important items he needed to take. One of them could decide the outcome of the ultimate war in the future.

He left a great number of treasures in this place, his largest treasury, in fact. People would never be able to squander the number of resources in this treasury for many lifetimes.

The resources were accumulated by him in preparation for the apocalypse. The treasures within were heaven-defying. Even emperors would crave them but of course, none of them would dare to have any thoughts about it. They knew who this treasury belonged to.

However, there was one unrepentant soul who has always been eyeing this treasury. His name was Gu Zun!

For Li Qiye, he could eradicate the guy easily regardless of how strong he was. In fact, he didn't even need to do it himself. If it wasn't for the Black Dragon King's beseech moving Li Qiye, Gu Zun would have been removed from this world long ago.

Though Gu Zun claimed to be reformed and has changed his heart to become a good person, Li Qiye knew full well that a dog would never stop eating shit. He only acted in this manner back then to win the Black Dragon King's sympathy and would never actually give up.

Of course, both Li Qiye and the dragon king knew that Gu Zun wouldn't change even in face of death. Alas, the king promised someone which was why Gu Zun could live till now. Otherwise, he would have personally crippled him and force him to be a mortal!

In Li Qiye's eyes, Gu Zun was only an ant. It didn't matter whether the guy was repenting or not. If Gu Zun continued to be a fool standing on his path, he would crush him like an ant.

Though he didn't want to massacre the Heaven Suppression City, he wouldn't show any mercy if it had to be done even if it meant slaughtering the city! Thus, for this trip to the Grand Sea, blood was on his mind.

# Chapter 1544: Mother And Daughter

---

A clean, ocean breeze made Li Qiye take a deep breath and felt quite refreshed.

Despite their aquatic nature, Heaven Spirit and the Grand Sea were distinctly different. Heaven Spirit was a marsh full of abundant moisture or a grand mist with the smell of the ocean. The Grand Sea, on the other hand, had a pure and refreshing aura with a slight fragrance of soil and vegetation.

Li Qiye landed on a series of islands. The large ones were ten thousands of miles while the small ones were around a hundred mile wide. These islands chained together like a long bridge spanning a vast distance.

They actually surrounded a great continent stretching for a million miles. It was a giant ship that would never sink.

Li Qiye stepped on this continent and took his time strolling through it.

“The evolution of the races is one of the most profound questions across time. A few evolutions have far exceeded linear expectation. A creature crawling out of the deep sea, there’s too many secrets behind it.” Li Qiye commented with a tinge of emotions.

He eventually came to an old city and looked up to see the words, “Renowned”.

Renowned was a bustling city under the control of influential clans. Most properties were owned by them.

He stepped among the loud streets with the waves of people. He enjoyed this rare experience of mortal life.

“I still like the Mortal Emperor World the most.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile.

Mortal Emperor gave such a different aura than Heaven Spirit.

Though the latter was outstanding, it gave a suffocating feeling after staying there for too long as if a shadow was looming overhead.

Finally, he leisurely entered an inn and sat by the window before calling for several breakfast meals with some warm wine. He drank and ate his breakfast while watching the crowd. There was an indescribable sense of enjoyment to just waste away the day with a smile.

He didn't come here randomly since there was an item that he wanted. This trip was meant to gather several weapons that he hasn't touched before. However, since he was planning to leave the nine worlds to go all out, he must bring his ace cards with him.

True Martial has heard from Immortal Emperor Min Ren before. Li Qiye indeed had some terrifying items and weapons. Moreover, there was a world-destroying artifact that could render the gods and emperors to ashes in an instant.

Such an item truly existed. More importantly, it has fallen into his possession after he paid a great price.

As the saying goes, a wily rabbit has three nests. For Li Qiye, the Grand Sea was one of them. He hid many things in this place, including two weapons.

He was ready to bring these weapons along for the final battle in the future. Victory shall be decided with one blow since there won't be another chance.

He took his time sipping his wine and watched the pedestrians outside. Meanwhile, the guests in the inn were chatting it up about everything.

Normally, these conversations wouldn't interest him since they were completely insignificant. But at this moment, he enjoyed listening in.

It reminded him of Jian Wenxin's phrase - the heavens is too

unreachable. There is nothing bad about being a trapped ant in this world.

He smiled wryly after thinking about this. Unfortunately, he can't do it. He was a rebellious ant that wanted to trample on an elephant!

Children everywhere and prosperity... If he wanted this, he could still experience such happy days. Alas, this was not his true pursuit. Nothing in this world could stop him from treading forward.

He dispelled his thoughts and everything disappeared with a single smile.

"Thump! Thump! Thump!" Busy and light footsteps came about. Two people entered the inn, one old and one young like a mother and daughter. They entered the top floor and quietly sat by a remote corner and ordered a few dishes.

Li Qiye glanced over and found that the woman was more than thirty but still looked quite young. She wore a simple hemp dress with an embroidered flower and no makeup.

The dress was quite big with a hood. She wore it all the way down as if wanting to hide her face. These factors didn't hide her beauty at all due to her charming eyes and defined brows. It was an amorous and flirtatious look.

On top of her finely sculpted features, her figure was also incredible. The dress couldn't hide her curves, full breasts, and rounded hips. Her feminine charm was as clear as day. This was a mature and juicy grape that made others can't help but want to pluck it down for a bite.

She was very cautious. After sitting down with a sweeping glance, she immediately lowered her hood even more. On the contrary, her daughter was a lot bolder. She was around six or seven with a pair of big and round eyes, full of spirit and life. Her

fair skin and already-apparent features made it clear that she would grow up to be a beauty.

The girl curiously looked around as if she rarely came to such a fun area. Everything seemed new to her.

She also saw Li Qiye looking at them but she wasn't afraid of strangers at all. She even glared at him and raised her tiny fist.

Her mother immediately pulled her back and gave her a mean stare. This was a nervous and vigilant woman.

At this time, more noise came from the outside from horses and carriages. The inn was surrounded in a short time.

"What's going on?" The guests looked around after hearing the commotion.

"It's people from the Wenren Clan." The guests were alarmed after seeing the troops outside.

The woman sitting in the corner was alarmed as well and pulled her daughter behind her for concealment.

"Thump! Thump! Thump!" Vigorous footsteps resounded with dozens of people coming to the top floor.

They all wore silk robes with a young man leading the way. He wore a dazzling robe and looked quite handsome and gallant. His eyes were quite clear with a smile as bright as the sun. This made him look quite approachable.

"Young Noble, what, what's going on? Did my little inn offend you in any way?" The shopkeeper was quite tense and hurriedly asked.

"No, this has nothing to do with your inn." The youth looked around and saw the woman. He then told everyone: "Gentlemen, the Wenren Clan has to take care of personal business, please leave for now. It's my treat today."

Having said that, he handed a gold ingot to the shopkeeper.

The shopkeeper was happy right away and didn't dare to object. The guests also withdrew one after another without lingering around.

Wenren Jianshi was the oldest male from the Wenren Clan. This was the ruling clan of Renowned so everyone gave the clan and its oldest son some face.

In a short time, there was only Li Qiye and the mother-daughter duo left. The inn became quiet instantly. Li Qiye acted as if nothing has happened and continue to eat and drink while watching people walking through the street.

“Hey brother, it's my treat today. Please take your leave?” Wenren Jianshi noticed Li Qiye and asked.

# Chapter 1545: A Daughter Out Of Nowhere

---

Li Qiye slowly turned around to look at Wenren Jianshi and chuckled: “I don’t need you to treat me since not just anyone is qualified to do so.” Having said that, he casually threw a refined jade piece on the table as the payment.

The shopkeeper was salivating after seeing the refined jade but he didn’t dare to get it since Wenren Jianshi was still around.

Jianshi’s followers’ expression sank after hearing this. Some experts wanted to step up but were stopped by Jianshi.

He stared at Li Qiye for a moment and raised his brows. He couldn’t see through this man ahead at all. The guy looked very ordinary but was completely unperturbed in the face of danger.

“Excuse us then.” He cupped his fists and said, not wanting to provoke Li Qiye.

He headed towards the corner and told the woman: “Lil’ Sis, come back with me. Father has ordered to bring you back!”

The woman lowered her head without saying anything. She was holding onto her sleeves under the table, seemingly thinking about breaking through the containment to run.

“Sis, you know that you have no chance of escaping.” Jianshi spoke gravely: “If you’re not thinking for your own sake, at least think about your child.” He gently signed as his eyes fell upon the little girl behind her.

The woman didn’t respond but she clearly hesitated for a moment. After a long time, she finally looked at him: “Eldest Brother, let me go out of consideration for sibling love and our time together.”

Jianshi sighed again and shook his head: “Sis, you know that this isn’t up to me. The Dongfang Clan wants an answer and Father won’t let this go either unless you name that person! But I can

guarantee you about you and your child's safety. That's all I can do."

She pinched her sleeves again before answering: "I won't return and won't go to the Dongfang Clan either. That's already a thing of the past!"

"It is indeed in the past but someone must answer for this! The relationship between the two clans isn't a joke. Sis, must you force my hand?" Jianshi said sternly.

She was dazed at this moment and didn't know what to do.

"Invite the miss home. Do not hurt her." Jianshi ordered.

At this time, the ten experts behind him slowly stood up. The leader cupped his fists towards the woman: "Miss, please, forgive us for our action."

In the blink of an eye, the ten experts surrounded the mother and daughter. There was no way for them to escape.

"Don't hurt my mother!" The daughter stepped in front and shouted.

"Don't worry, we won't hurt your mother but the two of you need to come back with us." Wenren Jianshi slowly told the girl.

"You're a bad person! You're all bad!" She shouted at Jianshi.

Jianshi was startled for a moment before smiling and didn't really mind her.

At this time, the experts slowly headed for the two of them. The woman pulled her daughter back behind her but she was stuck in a hard situation!

At this key moment, the little girl hiding behind looked around for a bit before her eyes flashed and shouted at Li Qiye: "Papa, quick, help mommy!"

"Ugh-" Li Qiye froze a bit while sipping his wine and almost spat some out.

He turned around to look at the girl. The woman was also momentarily stunned.

At this time, gazes swept by. All the experts surrounding the two women turned towards Li Qiye with an unfriendly expression as if they were looking at a prey! Some were even in the motion of walking over to trap him.

“This has nothing to do with him!” The woman was alarmed and quickly cried out. She wanted to absolve Li Qiye of any involvement but this only made it worse!

In a short time, the experts glaring at Li Qiye had an even more fierce gaze and were surrounding him.

“Brother, this is a misunderstanding. It has nothing to do with him.” The woman hurriedly told Jianshi.

Jianshi was surprised initially before smiling wryly and looking at Li Qiye: “I want to hear an explanation from the gentleman.”

“Papa!” The daughter came out of nowhere and latched onto Li Qiye’s thigh while pointing at the experts: “Beat down these bad guys, all of them!”

The woman grimaced and shouted again: “Huaiyu, stop messing around, come back...”

“No, I won’t!” The naughty girl hollered back: “Papa is unstoppable and can take down these bad guys in just three or five moves!”

The woman was speechless after hearing this despite wanting to correct this weird situation.

“Papa, you’re the strongest in this world, take them down already.” The girl looked like a bully right now as if Li Qiye was really about to give the experts a beating.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile while looking at the slyness evident in the girl’s eyes: “You are wrong. Even if I was your

father, I would be a defenseless scholar, not the strongest in the world.”

Having said that, he raised both hands and smiled amicably at the experts: “Gentlemen, we’re all educated people here that use their words instead of fists. Let’s take our time talking, I rely on my handsome face to eat so please, don’t hit the face or I’ll go hungry.”

The girl glared at Li Qiye after not getting her imagined result and scoffed: “Coward!”

Li Qiye didn’t mind at all and smirked: “I’ve never been courageous before because the bold always die relatively early. I’m still so young and don’t want to go down the grave so soon.”

“You!” She stared at him for half a day but couldn’t say anything.

The girl was a bit cunning but the disparity was too great compared to Li Qiye. Plus, he only wanted to tease her.

“If you are my brother-in-law, then you should visit our clan. A groom should see your in-laws.” Wenren Jianshi said slowly.

“No, Brother, he’s an outsider. This is all a misunderstanding, the child was only speaking nonsense.” The woman became anxious and spoke loudly.

Jianshi’s eyes remained fixated at Li Qiye: “I want to hear him say that this is a misunderstanding or not.”

The girl also looked up at Li Qiye. Despite her naughty nature, her bright eyes were calling for hope.

Li Qiye noticed this and chuckled: “Then I’ll visit the Wenren Clan for a bit. Being a guest isn’t bad at all. Plus, everything can be solved with words. I’m a scholar who isn’t very good at other things but I’m sure I can reason any problems just fine.”

The girl smiled after hearing this.

“You... You don’t know what you’re involving yourself in.” The

woman urgently spoke.

Li Qiye cheerfully smiled: “I might not be sure but as the adage goes, as long as reason is on your side, you can travel all around the world. I’m a reasonable person so there’s no place I can’t go. I’m certain that the Wenren Clan is a place that adheres to reason as well. Of course, even if they don’t, I am a very persuasive person!”

She was completely stunned and didn’t know whether this man was really stupid or pretending. She couldn’t see through him at all.

“Really? Then we’ll go back to the Wenren Clan.” The girl excitedly jumped up and clapped.

“In that case, please follow us then.” Wenren Jianshi said with a smile.

The woman had no other choice. She couldn’t break away under these circumstances and now, a stranger has become involved as well. Without any other ideas, she had to go with the flow.

Under the escort of the experts, the three of them left the inn. Of course, it was more apt to call it a forceful transport.

The woman whispered to him: “You don’t know what kind of trouble you’re getting yourself in. If you are actually capable, it’s not too late to run or you’ll be courting death!”

## Chapter 1546: Wenren Clan

---

Li Qiye smiled and leisurely answered: “Courting death? No, no. I always reason first and I’m confident that I can convince just about anyone.”

“Reason?” The woman still couldn’t guess whether Li Qiye was a master in disguise or a foolish scholar.

She continued: “My father doesn’t reason if it stands in the way of his goals. This applies to his family members as well, let alone an outsider.”

Li Qiye chuckled: “When I reason, no one can refuse to listen.”

She became speechless again, having no idea what kind of guy this was.

Meanwhile, the girl was not worried at all as she looked around curiously. It was as if this was her first time at Renowned.

Li Qiye saw this and spoke to her: “Looks like she rarely came to the city. She must have grown up in a remote place?”

The woman stared at her daughter with eyes full of affection and love. There was a deep regret as well.

“She’s a good seed. Further delays would only ruin her future.” He said with a smile.

The woman had no good response for this. The experts escorted the group forward with great caution. They kept their eyes on the group, especially the woman lest she were to run.

After a long time, a huge mansion appeared. It was covered in clouds and looked very transcending in this old city.

The girl’s eyes turned bright and pointed at the mansion: “Mom, this is grandpa’s house? The Renowned Mansion you talked about?”

The woman only sighed in response.

“Yes.” Wenren Jianshi answered instead: “This is your grandpa’s house, your mother’s, and yours as well.”

She looked back at Jianshi and said: “Really? Grandpa is a bad guy and you are too!”

“Watch your words.” The woman scolded her right away.

“But it’s true!” She pouted indignantly: “If they’re not bad people, then why do they want to separate you and papa? Only bad guys will do something like that!”

The woman swallowed her words after seeing her daughter’s reddening eyes.

Jianshi didn’t scold her and only smiled: “It’s hard to gauge good and bad when it comes to adults. When you grow up, you’ll understand.”

“A good person is good and a bad person is bad, how is it difficult?” She angrily pouted.

Li Qiye enjoyed her cute appearance and rubbed her head.

However, the girl full of personality shook her head in order to dodge his hand.

“Am I not your papa?” Li Qiye wanted to tease her again: “In that case, I’ll be leaving then.”

“You’re a bad guy too!” Her eyes became watery and acted as if she was wronged.

Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t respond. Meanwhile, the woman was sighing with a dejected and sad appearance. Her pretty brows were shrouded in a gloomy air.

They entered Renowned and found themselves in a new world. The serene scene here immediately isolated the lively city outside.

An earthly scent pervaded the mansion like the mist. A mortal would find himself thinking that this was a land of immortals. Breathing in this aura was too comfortable.

“Feels nice, what is this?” The girl clearly reacted after entering.

Jianshi took note and told the woman: “Sis, she’s a good seed. If she were to stay here, her future will be bright.”

The woman continued her silent act.

Li Qiye was just smiling like always. The earthly scene and energy might seem like a transcending realm for mortals but in his eyes, this was only a minor abode.

Wenren Jianshi let the rest stay outside while he came in alone.

The woman quietly told Li Qiye: “Before actually entering the mansion, you should escape now. This is your last chance.”

“Why?” To which he responded: “Getting a beautiful wife and a cute daughter on top of an influential father-in-law out of thin air, that’s a good thing like a pie falling down from the sky. People would kill for this luck so how could I refuse it?”

“You...” She stared at Li Qiye, wondering about his true intention. In the end, she coldly said: “You should know what kind of existence the Wenren Clan is.”

“No idea.” He bluntly answered. In fact, he really didn’t know and didn’t need to know at all. It wasn’t necessary to investigate a little clan.

After some time, Wenren Jianshi came back and told the woman: “Father wishes to see you.”

She took a deep breath and took the girl’s arm. However, Jianshi stopped her and said seriously: “Sis, it’s not wise to let father see her right now, that’s fanning the fire. Don’t worry, I’ll make sure nothing happens to her.”

After hesitating for a bit, she eventually nodded and left the girl to enter alone.

The girl wasn’t afraid of people. She looked at Jianshi and asked: “Does grandpa have horns and wings and a long neck like a bad

guy?”

The experts here had black lines running through their forehead. Wenren Jianshi didn't know whether to laugh or cry either.

He squatted down and told the girl earnestly: “Grandpa isn't a bad guy. It's just that he doesn't have a choice in some matters...”

“If he's not a bad guy, why does he want to separate mama and papa?” The girl hastily complained.

“You will understand when you grow up.” Jianshi rubbed her head and smiled: “Your father and mother also understand his predicament.”

Having said that, Jianshi continued: “Tell your uncle, what's your father's name?”

The girl blinked and circled back to hold onto Li Qiye's thigh: “This is my papa!”

Li Qiye said with a faint smile: “It's not that easy to trick this girl.”

Jianshi rubbed her head more and smiled wryly: “A clever child, like her mother. Unfortunately, clever people sometimes do foolish things.”

Li Qiye said casually: “I'm tired. There must be an area for guests to rest?”

Jianshi gave him a strange stare and was full of curiosity at his leisure attitude. This guy was acting as if this was his own home.

“Accommodate the young noble, do not be impolite to our guest.” Jianshi told one of the experts nearby.

Li Qiye smiled casually and followed the expert without commenting.

They prepared a place for him. Of course, he was separated from the mother and daughter.

Despite being a guest, he wasn't that far off from being a prisoner and always had people following him. They did follow Jianshi's order and didn't make it difficult for him.

After settling down, he treated this place as his own home and took his time relaxing. He seemed very comfortable taking a stroll everywhere.

The clan's disciples followed him but didn't stop him from wandering since they didn't see any intent on escaping from him.

Not long later, Wenren Jianshi came by and saw Li Qiye in the garden. He smiled wryly at this guy appearing out of nowhere and acting as if he was the boss.

"Looks like you are used to this place now. I am relieved." He came forward and said with a smile.

## Chapter 1547: Wenren Lurui

---

Li Qiye was half-lying down in the pavilion while looking at the lake before telling a disciple from the Wenren Clan: “Go brew a pot of tea, pick something good.”

The disciples’ expression shifted after hearing and seeing his attitude. They were important characters in the clan but now, a fake son-in-law was actually treating them as servants.

“Don’t be unhappy.” Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at them and said flatly: “To be able to wait on me is your fortune. Go.”

Their expression turned for the worst. They have seen arrogant people before but never to this level.

“Go brew some for him. I still have a good one here.” Wenren Jianshi’s attitude was much better as he ordered these disciples.

Though the annoyed disciples ignored Li Qiye, they didn’t dare to not listen to the Elder Young Noble’s instruction so they went to make some tea.

After they left, Jianshi looked over at Li Qiye and asked: “May I ask where you are from and your name?”

“Last name’s Li, just a wandering vagabond.” Li Qiye casually answered.

This attitude of his was very unreasonable. Keep in mind that the Wenren Clan was very influential in this region. Jianshi, in particular, had a prestigious status as well. No cultivators in these parts would dare to act so pompously in front of him.

He didn’t become angry and replied: “Brother Li, you can’t become the Wenren Clan’s son-in-law with these answers.”

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “You got it wrong. I don’t know and don’t care to know whether I can be the Wenren’s son-in-law. However, it is impossible to find someone in the nine heavens who

can become my older brother-in-law.”

Jianshi had no words and had to take a careful look at Li Qiye. He didn't know where the guy's confidence came from. In just a short time, he felt a bit uncertain. Was this ordinary man truly a hidden master or was he just boasting?

During this difficult moment, the disciples of the clan brought the tea forward.

As the host, he adhered to the proper etiquette and personally poured a cup for both him and Li Qiye. Li Qiye didn't act reserved either and slowly raised his cup.

Jianshi also took a sip as well before asking: “Brother Li, the son-in-law of the Wenren Clan might not necessarily enjoy wealth and riches so easily. Maybe even before they see any of that, their lives would be thrown away first.”

He made it clear enough as a reminder towards Li Qiye.

“Who says I want riches?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Materialistic possessions are fleeting.”

This answer perplexed Jianshi even more.

“How much do you know about your brother-in-law?” Li Qiye enjoyed the sceneries and his tea. After a long time, he casually asked Jianshi without turning around.

“I thought it was you, Brother Li.” Jianshi smiled and said: “Of course, it's not too late to deny it. Otherwise, once people made up their mind, you won't be able to escape even if you want to.”

“I'm a reasonable person.” He took another sip: “So I hope your Wenren Clan is reasonable as well.”

“If this matter could be solved in this manner, it wouldn't be like this right now.” Jianshi shook his head: “Reasons won't do here. If you think you can talk it through, Brother Li, you are sorely mistaken.”

“No. my logics have always reached people, that’s what I’m best at.” Li Qiye emphasized.

Jianshi had no idea what Li Qiye wanted to do. He eventually said: “Brother Li, what’s your intention?”

“So you think I’m not your brother-in-law? Don’t tell me you know who he is.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled and said.

Jianshi’s expression changed. He looked at Li Qiye: “If it’s someone I know, all of this wouldn’t happen now.”

Li Qiye chuckled and sipped his tea. After a while, he broke the silence: “How does your clan want to tidy up this mess?”

Jianshi pondered meticulously before responding while staring at Li Qiye: “A great price must be paid for a few matters. Brother Li, this isn’t a joke. There’s nothing here for you to scheme about since you are risking your life.”

“You can’t put it like that.” Li Qiye nonchalantly replied: “A beautiful wife and a smart daughter, what more can a man want? There’s no need to scheme for anything else.”

Jianshi still found this man mystifying like in the beginning. In the end, all he could say was: “I have done my part trying to convince you to this point. Brother Li, take care. Leave the heavens to decide whether this will be a disaster or a blessing for you.”

“No, that’s up for me to decide. When I am angry, it is a disaster; when I am happy, it is a blessing.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

Jianshi didn’t say anything else. He sighed and got up.

As he was about to leave, Li Qiye chuckled: “Your clan needs a scapegoat, right?”

Jianshi became slightly stiff before answering: “It’s not something we can decide, not even my father. If you are really my brother-in-law, you better start praying.”

“What about you?” Li Qiye leisurely asked: “What is your

opinion on this? Are you on your sister's side or your clan's?"

"It's not up for me alone to decide." Jianshi shook his head: "One misstep and it's all downhill. This is the current situation of our clan. I can only say that the child is innocent so I can guarantee her safety. As for other matters, I am completely powerless, same for my father."

"What about your sister then?" Li Qiye asked.

Jianshi took his time thinking before answering: "She's a smart woman. When she made this choice in the past, she knew what would come of this. If he was only a bit less willful and a little more rational, this wouldn't be the outcome, an impossible to clean up mess! I can't do anything to help her either, the ancestors in the clan won't just sit idly by." Having said that, he sighed and left.

Li Qiye continued drinking his tea with an amused and carefree smile.

On the second day, the woman came with her daughter. Jianshi was with them as well.

"I won't disturb your family. Say what you have to say, there might not be a chance in the future." He stared with implication at Li Qiye before leaving. He ordered the guards by the door to leave as well.

In a short time, there was only the three of them left but they weren't family so the atmosphere became a bit awkward.

Li Qiye looked at the plump and seductive woman before asking: "What's your name?"

The woman took a deep breath and bowed down. She didn't lose the elegant demeanor of a noble: "My name is Wenren Lurui. What is your name, Young Noble?"

"Last name, Li." Li Qiye didn't reveal too much. His eyes then fell on the little girl.

“This is my daughter, her name is Huaiyu. Same last name as me.” She hurriedly said.

“Her mother’s surname, I see.” Li Qiye smiled.

Meanwhile, Wenren Huaiyu stared at Li Qiye for a bit then back at her mother before smiling cutely: “Mother, you two do look like a pair of husband and wife.”

“Less nonsense.” Lurui instantly scolded her with her face turning red.

Li Qiye didn’t mind and looked at the girl: “Why did you do that back in the inn?”

“Are you not my father then?” She blinked and said with some slyness.

“Huaiyu. I told you to not run your mouth, have you not cause enough trouble yet?” Lurui’s maternal sternness erupted and told her daughter to stop.

“But, but... he’s kind of like papa!” Huaiyu pouted in response: “You always told me that papa is an indomitable and fearless man who never panic in any situation! Plus, because he’s so powerful, he can face any danger without a problem!” Her eyes turned a little red at this point.

Lurui didn’t know what to say after seeing her daughter like that.

# Chapter 1548: Lurius Husband

---

Li Qiye only smiled and patted Huaiyu's head after seeing her indignant expression.

“Go play outside.” Luriu looked at her daughter with pity and said: “I need to talk to Young Noble Li.”

She was still a little girl after all. Despite feeling wronged earlier, she immediately cheered and ran outside. She was curious about all the new things since she used to stay with her mom in a remote location. This was her first time visiting a lively city like Renowned and a big clan like the Wenren. Thus, this outside world was new to her.

Luriu became sad again and sighed after seeing her excited daughter zooming outside. She calmed down and told Li Qiye: “Young Noble Li, you can still leave now before seeing my father.”

“Leave? Why should I?” Li Qiye sat down and calmly said.

Luriu looked at him and slowly explained: “No need to pretend. We know that this is only a misunderstanding since my silly daughter dragged you into this problem. Though I can't leave, I still have a way for you to escape safely.”

“No rush. To have a beautiful wife and cute daughter out of nowhere is a nice development like a pie falling from the sky. It would be a shame if I don't eat it.” He leisurely smiled.

Luriu became angry but she didn't know whether he was kidding or not. She took a second look at this ordinary man with an extraordinary calmness. It was as if he was a majestic mountain and nothing could move him. She had a hard time gauging his intention.

Nevertheless, he didn't look like a scoundrel. It seemed that whatever he did, he would carry it out in a leisure, natural, and elegant manner.

“Young Noble Li, even a pie falling down from the sky might not be a good thing.” She said slowly: “You are throwing your life into this mess if you keep on pretending. It’s just that you have no clue what is going on.”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh: “Though I don’t know what is going on, I can still easily guess. This is the age-old story of a rich daughter running away from marriage.”

Luriu was surprised. She didn’t expect him to still be so calm. There was no opening from his expression and gestures.

He continued on: “This is all too common so it’s easy to guess. To put it simply, your Wenren Clan and another clan had a marriage alliance but you didn’t wish to marry so you ran away with your man before giving birth to a daughter. Am I right?”

She had no response because he was completely right.

“Let me guess what kind of man he is?” Li Qiye glanced at her and smiled: “Since you ran away to be with him, it shows that you love him very much. But your daughter still takes on her maternal surname instead of her father, there are three possible explanations for this. First, the father’s name is Wenren too. Second, his background is extremely humble, not worth taking his surname. Third, your clan knows who he is so you don’t want others to find out his last name!”

He paused for a bit at this point: “However, if you dared to do this, it shows that you don’t look down on him that much. In Renowned, there is no second Wenren Clan so the only explanation is the third, he is someone your clan knows.”

Her expression shifted because he was right again. He realized this and said flatly: “If it is the third choice on top of you running away and hide, it shows that your father and brother know who he is.”

“Since you took all of this risk, it shows that you are a courageous

and daring woman. Thus, how could you be afraid of your clan knowing your lover's name? Nevertheless, you chose to do so. This shows one thing clearly. This person is very important. You are trying to protect him and his position and reputation.'

"So, if he is a strong man in a prestigious position, there's nothing wrong with him marrying someone he likes. Moreover, from what you've told your daughter, he is extraordinary and single. But the most important thing is that your daughter has never seen her father, at the very least from when she began to have memories. It shows that the two of you haven't been together for at least five years. You two dared to birth to a daughter but why not stay together? One plausible explanation is that he was working hard to win the recognition of your clan so that the two of you could make your relationship public."

He smiled and stared at the shaken woman: "What kind of man would want to win your clan's recognition on top of being powerful and prestigious? Let me take a guess, it must be a disciple from your Wenren Clan but his last name isn't Wenren!"

She turned pale after hearing this. Li Qiye knew that his guesses were right so far and continued on: "I'll keep going. Your daughter's name is [Huaiyu](#) so it's as clear as day that your lover's name has the word "Yu" in it. You gave her this name because you miss him."

With that, he looked at the white flower in front of her dress and said: "To add to all of these speculations, I know that there is a particular group in the Grand Sea, a branch of the dragonfish belonging to the demon race. This race is elusive due to inhabiting in the depth of the sea. It has a particular tradition. When a member of this race dies, his family, every five years, would wear a spectral flower to remember him. Your daughter is seven now and you are wearing this special flower, it means that your husband came from the dragonfish branch. Moreover, he has died five years ago. Your appearance in Renowned means that he was buried here.

You brought your daughter here to commemorate him. Furthermore, he was buried in your clan's cemetery. That's how you were spotted."

"You..." Lurui was indeed frightened and took several steps back with her wide-open eyes staring at Li Qiye.

"Who, who sent you here!" He got it right completely.

Li Qiye chuckled and denied: "Does someone need to send me? Rich experience, extensive knowledge, and some bold guesses. Not that hard to figure out."

She looked at him as if he was a ghost and felt that there was no place to hide before his peering eyes. Under his calm eyes, she seemed to be completely naked.

It took her awhile before she removed her glare. This Li Qiye knew too much.

"Don't bother." He saw her eyes slightly moving and knew her intention: "Trying to silence me is very unwise. If I dare to sit here, it means that I've never been afraid of you or anyone for that matter!"

She eventually took a deep breath and regained her wits: "What do you want?"

"What do I want?" He shook his head: "Why does everyone thinks I am plotting something? To be frank, you have nothing worth my effort. In terms of beauty, you are indeed a little pretty but if I want women, I just need to signal and women ten times as beautiful as you would come running to serve me. As for treasures, you don't have any worth mentioning, same with your clan."

Lurui had no response. She might not be a supreme beauty but she was definitely number one in Renowned and enjoyed great fame. Moreover, her clan was quite prestigious but Li Qiye spoke as if it was not worth a single coin.

Huai = ] to think of; to cherish; mind; heart; bosom. Yu = jade

# Chapter 1549: Marriage Trouble

---

In this short moment, Wenren Lurui stared at Li Qiye in astonishment. She couldn't gauge him at all. In her eyes, this seemingly ordinary man was an unfathomable abyss shrouded in mist. No one could see just how deep he was.

She became afraid. The closer someone stood to him, the closer they found themselves standing on the precipice. A careless step would result in falling down, never being able to escape again.

"Don't worry, I won't expose you by telling your father and brother." Li Qiye chuckle: "You can protect his reputation and status."

After a long time, she calmed down and took a deep breath: "Since you know already, why are you involving yourself in this trouble?"

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: "Trouble? This matter might seem insurmountable to you, a problem that could swallow up the sky but in my eyes, it's no big deal and can be easily solved."

"And as for why?" He continued: "I am only coming through here by chance and I'm bored enough to find some entertainment."

Luriu became quiet again and didn't know what to say at all due to the mystifying nature of this man and her own unawareness.

Li Qiye looked at her and said: "I'm actually curious, was he your senior brother or junior brother?"

She eventually sighed and had to respond: "He's my eldest senior brother and was taken in by my family at a young age."

Since Li Qiye guessed everything completely, Luriu didn't feel the need to hide it any longer. She might as well tell him everything.

“Our Wenren Clan has been in an alliance with the Dongfang Clan all this time. Moreover, it is a marriage alliance as well. Only when our two clans are together that we are able to oppose the ambitious Soaring Hawk State. Because of this, I was engaged to the Dongfang Clan’s eldest son when I was still a child...”

[Her clan dominated Renowned while the Dongfang Clan ruled over a city named East.](#) The two clans were quite close with their marriage pact.

Meanwhile, the other ruler in another territory within the island chain was Soaring Hawk. It was much stronger than the two clans so in order to contend against this third faction, the two clans needed to form an alliance. No alliance bond was stronger than a marriage.

Wenren Luriu was betrothed to Dongfang Cong, the eldest son of the Dongfang. Alas, she hated this marriage, the source of her internal conflicts.

Moreover, as she grew up, she found herself liking her eldest senior brother, Gu Qiyu. The two were childhood sweethearts and were together all the time. Naturally, feelings eventually arose and turned into love.

Gu Qiyu was taken in by the Wenren Clan when he was a child. His talents were exceptional on top of being diligent, resulting in his great cultivation. Though he couldn’t become the successor for the clan, he would be one of its pillars in the future.

He knew that his junior sister was engaged to the Dongfang Clan as well. Because of this, he didn’t move forward in spite of their feelings for each other.

However, as time continued to pass, the marriage date was fast approaching.

In spite of Luriu’s protest, the marriage was decided by the ancestors from the two clans. It wasn’t something a young lady

could oppose nor control. Even her father couldn't object to this marriage.

Her disgust with the marriage only worsened since she had someone else in mind as well. She garnered courage out of nowhere and actually left the clan to escape out of Renowned.

The Wenren Clan naturally became angry when the marriage was so close and the bride was nowhere to be found. If anything happened to this marriage, the pact between the two clans could crack.

Because of this, it sent out many disciples and tried its best to find Luriu. Of course, the eldest senior brother shouldered this responsibility as well.

He and Luriu grew up together and had feelings for each other so he understood her quite well. He knew where she was hiding so he was one step ahead of all the other pursuers.

His mission was to take her back to the clan but he couldn't do it when actually staring at her face to face.

In the end, he helped her escape into a very remote area. During the perilous getaway, they finally took the next step and became husband and wife.

After settling her in, he came back to the Wenren Clan and guaranteed her that he would publicly win her hand in marriage.

However, it was easier said than done. He needed to contribute greatly to have the chance. Five years ago, during a skirmish between Soaring Hawk and the Wenren, Qiyu wanted to be the shining example so he rushed into the battlefield to kill many opposing experts.

Alas, though the Wenren Clan won that battle, Qiyu also died on that day. He couldn't wait until the day when he could marry Luriu and she wouldn't be able to wait for his return either.

After the five years anniversary, Luriu snuck in with her

daughter to commemorate her husband but the disciples there unexpectedly found her. She had to run away and managed to meet Li Qiye.”

“Love is difficult.” Li Qiye said after hearing her story: “What is your plan?”

She mused for a bit before answering: “I’ll apologize with my life towards the Dongfang Clan so that Huaiyu can live on.”

“No, you can live on instead of treating your life so frivolously.” Li Qiye shook his head: “It’s not that desperate yet, no need to think about dying.”

“You don’t understand.” She disagreed: “Someone has to die for this matter to end. The Dongfang Clan requires an answer from my clan. Otherwise, the alliance might break and they could even become enemies.”

Li Qiye simply smiled. He has seen this many times before with a runaway bride. Both the clans thought that they have lost all face from this. Thus, something has to be done for the alliance to stay intact.

“Don’t worry.” He smiled: “As long as the two sides work together and talk, there will be a turnaround.”

She smiled bitterly in response: “There’s nothing to talk about. My father can’t be in charge either. Even if the ancestors in the clan want to protect me, it will still be impossible. The best method is for me to die as an apology!”

She took a deep breath and solemnly said: “I have expected this end long ago. As long as father and the others can protect Huaiyu and that my death will end this feud, I don’t mind dying. You should know now that no good thing will come from involving yourself. A scapegoat is necessary so if you continue to pretend, our Wenren Clan will be more than happy to oblige.”

With that, she spoke with good intent, not wanting to implicate

Li Qiye: “It’s not too late to make a decision now. Once the people from the Dongfang Clan come, then you won’t be able to escape death at that point.”

“I can’t die even if I want to.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh.

Such attitude left her speechless. It looked like he didn’t care for her goodwill.

“Your region must belong to the [Crouching Dragon Continent](#).” Li Qiye asked leisurely while she stood there in a daze.

“Yes, all of the island chains belong to this continent. Our two clans and the Soaring Hawk State are all under the jurisdiction of the Crouching Dragon Cliff.”

“How many locations are under the control of the cliff now? Who is currently in charge?” He asked again.

This sudden question surprised her since it was common knowledge to any cultivator at Crouching Dragon.

Wen City and Dong City would be the pinyin names. They take the first character of the clan’s surname

Crouching Dragon used to be Sleeping Dragon. I'll mass edit Sleeping Dragon to Crouching Dragon later

# Chapter 1550: The Wenren Clans Plan

---

Wenren Lurui's wits returned after a short stupor. She nodded: "The twenty-eight countries on this continent are under the jurisdiction of the Crouching Dragon Cliff, including small factions like our two clans and Soaring Hawk."

"Twenty-eight countries? Looks like the cliff's power is growing." Li Qiye smiled and said.

Lurui nodded: "Ever since the Sky Dragon King took over the cliff, it continued to grow. Recently, after the king came out from isolated cultivation, [she shocked the entire Mortal Emperor World with her unfathomable power](#). Many great powers in the Grand Sea were convinced by her and became friends with the cliff."

"Sky Dragon King? Who is that?" Li Qiye found this surprising.

Lurui gave him a strange stare because not just in the Crouching Dragon Continent but all of the Grand Sea has heard of the Sky Dragon King. Someone who hasn't heard of her must have been a complete rookie.

"The Sky Dragon King is the current sect master of the cliff. Her name is [Wolong Xuan](#)." Lurui eventually replied.

"Wolong Xuan." Li Qiye smiled and said: "Sky Dragon King, a dragon presiding over the sky; quite a domineering title."

"The dragon king's prestige is considerable. Some say that she is the strongest in the cliff so of course, her title is domineering. In the contemporary, she and the Heaven Suppression Goddess of the citadel are known as the two supreme geniuses of the Grand Sea. Everyone says that she is qualified to compete for the Heaven's Will."

Lurui said with a longing expression. She once desired to be someone like the Sky Dragon King or the Heaven Suppression Goddess, able to walk freely in this world. If she had such power,

her fate wouldn't have been at the mercy of others.

Unfortunately, she could only think about it. Though the Wenren Clan was a mighty power compared to ordinary citizens and cultivators in Renowned, they were only a tiny sect compared to a behemoth like the Crouching Dragon Cliff.

Moreover, Luriu's constitution wasn't bad but it was no match for real geniuses. Because of this, she knew that she would never become a character like the dragon king. A dream it shall remain.

"The Heaven's Will, huh?" Li Qiye only chuckled.

Lurui eventually returned from her yearning and said solemnly: "Young Noble Li, run now. This is all I can do."

"No rush." Li Qiye said flatly: "On the contrary, I don't have anything to do right now so I can join in on the fun. I'm the type who becomes a bit agitated when there's nothing to do."

Lurui couldn't convince him any further. In the end, she looked at him and wondered what was his plan for joining the fray. She eventually sighed and left with Huaiyu.

The Heaven Suppression City wasn't far from him. At this moment, he was wondering if that city was ready to meet its fate. However, this prompted him to think even more carefully about whether he was ready to massacre the place.

Of course, he knew that Gu Zun would never give up and would never leave the city or stop coveting the treasury!

"Lil Blackie, though you have promised someone before, I won't show mercy this time. If Gu Zun tries to stop me, I'll kill him mercilessly as usual. Don't blame me for not being considerate. The city is also the culmination of your effort and mine as well, but if it tries to stop me too, it will turn into ashes. I won't mind massacring them all!"

His leisure eyes gazed towards the far distance and became quite profound and emotionless. Anyone would piss in their pants after

seeing this glare.

“In this lifetime, I shall not yield for anyone and will never allow them to cross my bottom lines. Lil Blackie, you need to pray for the fool to wise up. I have spared him once already, this was already merciful beyond my own creed.”

He could enter the city now if he wanted to. However, he was still hesitating on whether he was mentally prepared to kill them all.

Of course, massacring was trivial to Li Qiye. The act itself wouldn't be difficult at all. However, the dragon king spent too much effort on this city. This was someone who had absolute loyalty and paid too much for him. This was the reason for his hesitation. Otherwise, he would have already taken charge of the city.

\*\*\*

In the afternoon, just like Lurui has said, Wenren Jianshi came again with two experts behind him this time.

“Brother Li, father wishes to see you.” He was still very polite towards Li Qiye.

“Well, as the saying goes, even an ugly daughter-in-law will have to meet her in-laws eventually. I should also see my father-in-law.” He chuckled at his own joke.

When he stood up, the two experts behind Jianshi immediately came forward and pushed down his arms.

“If you don't remove your dog hands, they shall fall on the ground.” Li Qiye leisurely told the two of them.

Their expression sank and was about to become angry but Jianshi immediately smoothed things over: “Don't worry, Brother Li won't run away because if he wanted to, he wouldn't wait till now.” Having said that, he stared implicatively at Li Qiye.

The furious experts couldn't do anything but to let go and stood

to Li Qiye's left and right.

"Let's go then. It's nice to be able to see father-in-law." He leisurely said.

Finally, under the escort of two experts and Jianshi leading the way, Li Qiye entered a chamber and saw the Wenren Clan Master, Jianshi and Luriu's father.

Jianshi's group left right after bringing Li Qiye here.

The clan master was a dignified old man wearing a large robe while sitting in the master chair. He had the bearing of a leader.

His old eyes were fixated on Li Qiye the entire time. They were sharp to the point of seemingly flaying meat from his body.

Li Qiye didn't mind at all and coolly sat down.

"What is your name?" The clan master spoke coldly just like his demeanor. If he wasn't maintaining the style befitting of a clan master, others would actually think that he might cut down Li Qiye's head at sight.

Of course, he was already polite and merciful enough to not kill someone who impregnated his daughter.

"Surname Li, no need to say the rest." Li Qiye smiled while looking around.

"Such big tone!" The clan master angrily shouted after seeing his attitude.

"I've always been like this. If you have something to say, go ahead. After all, I know that you don't want to kill me right now since my life is still useful to your clan." Li Qiye nonchalantly replied.

"You!" The livid clan master glared at him while clenching his fists. Sure enough, if Li Qiye didn't have some use left to them, he would have killed him already!

In the end, he suppressed his anger and said: "You are

courageous indeed, no wonder why my daughter likes you.”

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile. There was no doubt about the clan master's lack of knowledge regarding the situation.

“But your courage is misplaced.” The clan master coldly said: “Seducing my daughter and breaking this marriage alliance, this is a crime deserving of death! No one will be able to save your life.”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye was still unperturbed.

The clan master started to feel a little strange after seeing the calmness in Li Qiye. He wondered where this brat was getting his courage from? There was no sign of nervousness or shock at all.

“There's no repentance for your crime. Our Wenren Clan still hasn't killed you because we are merciful. I can also forego your mistake...” The clan master said slowly.

This non-attribution of gender pronoun comes up a lot and some readers wonder why I do it in this manner. Usually, titles are gender neutral because I don't know if it is a male or a female without context. So if I attribute english gender pronouns based on the character, it means that I have to do it consistently across the entire novel. In this case, when you see king for the first time, you will think its a male automatically. If the author decides to reveal that it is a woman later, I would have to go back and change every single pronoun, including he to she. As you can see, this will be very problematic. Another problem is that King is not interchangeable with Queen and Empress. Queen often implies being married to a king, not being in charge of her own country. Empress would work in this case, but the raw character is not on the same level as Empress. It looks like the title of Empress is special since it is reserved for Empress Hong Tian only. Also, this same ambiguation exists in the raw as well and could be used as a literary device. That's why titles are gender neutral, not just because I'm lazy.

Wolong = Crouching Dragon, Xuan = a pretty type of jade

# Chapter 1551: Forced To Be A Scapegoat?

---

Li Qiye waved his sleeve to interrupt the clan master and said slowly: “Clan master, no need to go in a circle, get straight to the point. I’m waiting to listen.”

“You...” The clan master became furious. This brat seduced his daughter and broke their clans’ marriage plan. He had plenty of reasons to kill the brat but now, the guy was still so rude and arrogant. He really felt an urge to strangle the brat.

He stared at Li Qiye intensely and eventually subdued his anger once more. After a while, he spoke again: “Remember, brat, your sin is worthy of death.”

“I know.” Li Qiye smiled: “As the one causing this trouble, you want to hand me over to the Dongfang Clan to absolve your own of any problem.”

“That’s right.” The clan master repeated: “Breaking our marriage alliance is an unforgivable sin. The fact that you can still prance around in front of me right now is because I’m merciful enough.”

“Really?” Li Qiye didn’t mind at all. He was only killing time by joining into this mess.

The clan master took a deep breath and said: “Lurui has made a great sacrifice because of you. She gave up her noble status from her own clan, giving up the chance to become the mistress of the Dongfang Clan as well as Eastern City and giving up staying in Renowned, all of this just to risk escaping with you. She’s still thinking about you right now and plead earlier so that I would let you go.”

“Are you trying to convince me?” Li Qiye chuckled. He could understand why she pleaded for him since he was only a stranger being caught up in the storm.

“You can see it that way.” The clan master spoke frankly: “You

must know that a marriage alliance between two clans has grave importance. Once broken, it must be cast again with blood!”

“I understand. The perpetrator must die. You are afraid that I won’t admit to it, thus all of this persuasion.” Li Qiye was still all smiles.

The clan master scowled, not liking his blatant reveal.

Just like Li Qiye said, though they have captured Li Qiye, there was no evidence. The Dongfang Clan wouldn’t simply believe their words that Li Qiye was the one breaking the marriage.

At that moment, what if Li Qiye changed his mind and decided to bite them back? The relationship between the two clans would deteriorate to an unfixable level! The relationship was already awkward due to the failed marriage. If the Dongfang Clan were to think that the Wenren Clan used a scapegoat, there would be nothing left of their alliance.

“You must understand that you have to pay a price if you still love Lurui. This isn’t only for the Wenren Clan but also Lurui and your daughter!” The clan master coldly said.

“So you are still trying to protect your daughter.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The clan master hesitated for a moment before maintaining his cold tone: “The Wenren Clan can only try its best. As for Lurui’s fate, further deliberation is necessary with the Dongfang Clan. However, if you agree, we can guarantee you that your daughter will be safe!”

“Is that a threat?” Li Qiye inquired.

The clan master answered him with a cold stare. In fact, they understood that their only cards were Lurui and her daughter.

“Even if you don’t care for Lurui, you must think for your daughter since you’re the one bringing her to this world.” The clan master added.

“What do you want me to do then? Admit that I’m the one breaking the marriage? Or let me put the blame on Soaring Hawk, that I’m a spy sent by this power to seduce your daughter in order to break the ties between the two clans?”

The clan master found it hard to reply because of Li Qiye’s demeanor. He was unsure of the kind of person he was speaking to.

“Looks like you haven’t made up your mind either. However, since you want to hand me over to the Dongfang Clan, so be it. I’ll take a trip with you guys to that place.” Li Qiye smiled. In his opinion, since he was already involved, might as well go all the way and finished a good deed.

The clan master took a deep breath and felt relieved. He was waiting for Li Qiye to say this.

“Very well. Just be aware of your own choice. I can’t guarantee anything else but your daughter will definitely be safe!” The clan master finished.

Li Qiye chuckled and said flatly: “Don’t worry, I am a man who always picks the right choice.” He left after saying this.

The clan master’s eyes turned cold. Everything that has transpired so far has escaped his expectation. In the past, he would think that Li Qiye would be panicking after being caught, especially when his daughter was in the hands of the Wenren Clan.

However, this ordinary brat was too calm and completely indifferent to everything. This made it quite difficult for the clan master to have a grasp of the situation.

He really wanted to use the hostages to force Li Qiye to admit that he was a spy from Soaring Hawk. With that, the storm would subside quickly and the relationship between the two clans could be mended. Moreover, that was a great opportunity for their clans to join against Soaring Hawk as well.

However, Li Qiye’s attitude was too bizarre. The guy was too

calm as if he has predicted everything. Such nonchalant attitude made the clan master question whether he should recklessly implement this plan.

In his mind now, it was good enough for Li Qiye to admit fault. As long as they handed him over to the Dongfang Clan, that would be considered an appropriate answer to this whole mess.

“Go, inquire meticulously about who this brat is and where he came from.” The clan master eventually ordered the disciples from the clan.

After Li Qiye returned to his place, he found the place swarming with Wenren disciples. It was on lockdown with patrols everywhere. Of course, it wasn’t to protect him, only to stop him from escaping.

Wenren Jianshi came to him and said: “Brother Li, I’m afraid it’s too late for you to leave now. The chance is gone.”

“I haven’t thought about escaping.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Plus, if I wish to escape, your clan wouldn’t be able to stop me.”

Jianshi’s eyes slightly batted. He couldn’t see through this man at all so he didn’t know whether the guy was a master or was just putting up an act.

“Tomorrow, the Dongfang Clan will come and take you back to their clan. Though we’ll be going there with you, you need to take care of yourself then.” He said solemnly.

“Do you think I’m your brother-in-law?” Li Qiye asked Jianshi who was about to leave.

Jianshi gave him a playful smile: “If you’re not my brother-in-law, why do you insist on staying here? Why not deny it?”

“Makes sense.” Li Qiye smiled back: “To your clan, whether I’m the real thing or not isn’t important as long as I admit it to become a scapegoat. Your father might not know but you certainly do.”

Jianshi slowly said: “Brother Li, you can’t blame me for this. I wasn’t trying to implicate you and gave you opportunities to leave. The way I see it, you’re the one who has an ulterior motive by wanting to stay here.”

“Well said, I don’t blame you.” Li Qiye laughed: “I actually wanted to join in this trouble, just having some fun.”

Jianshi became quiet. His father didn’t know that LI Qiye was fake but he knew the truth. However, they were already riding the tiger and as Li Qiye has said, they needed a scapegoat.

# Chapter 1552: Wenren Jianshis Thoughts

---

Jianshi turned to leave again but Li Qiye suddenly asked: “Do you know who your brother-in-law is?”

His body froze for a bit before turning around again with an unnatural expression: “Isn’t it you, Brother Li?”

“Both of us are only saying that towards outsiders. I won’t reveal it and you won’t either but you know that I am a fake.” Li Qiye chuckled.

It was an implicit understanding of sorts between the two to keep this a secret.

“But it is Brother Li at this moment.” Jianshi smiled back: “You know that I didn’t force you at all. You agreed to this.”

“That’s true.” Li Qiye replied: “Let us go back to the topic of your brother-in-law. Though your lil sis is tight-lipped about this matter and probably never told you, you probably have guessed it being her brother and all.”

“I’m not all-knowing. I don't know if Lurui doesn’t tell me.” He shook his head.

Li Qiye laughed in response: “Your little trick is of no use in front of me. Even if your sister doesn’t tell you, you know the father of that child!”

“I also want to know but there’s no place to start.” Jianshi firmly denied.

To which Li Qiye laughed: “Is that so? I know that you know after seeing your expression towards Huaiyu. You don’t mind the child at all and even like her a little.”

He paused for a bit before continuing: “Just think about it, a man suddenly breaking the marriage alliance between your two clans and even had a daughter with your sister. This is a big scandal and

as the future clan master, you wouldn't want something like this to happen at all. Say, you love your sister so you can accept her mistake, I can understand this. However, from the perspective of the future clan master, you will not be able to accept a bastard into your clan even if you love your sister! But surprisingly enough, you adore the little girl and could accept her without any difficulty. What does this mean?"

He smiled mysteriously and stared at Jianshi: "it means that you can accept her identity and bloodline. On a deeper level, it shows that you know who her father is but it even goes further than that, you must have had a deep relationship with him! If it wasn't for this marriage alliance, perhaps you would have been happy to have him as a brother-in-law!"

Jianshi was shocked after hearing this and staggered backward with waves surging in his mind.

Though his sister really didn't reveal the father, they grew up together so when he saw Huaiyu, he immediately guessed everything, including the identity of the father.

Just like Li Qiye has said, a bastard child shouldn't appear in the Wenren Clan. However, he didn't mind at all and could accept her. One could even say that he was very excited to see his niece and was ready to assume the responsibility of being an uncle.

Despite his guess, he didn't tell anyone, not even his father because he didn't wish to besmirch the reputation of a hero. After all, he made illustrious contributions and gave up his life for the Wenren Clan!

He thought that no one would know this matter outside of Lurui herself. Who would have thought that Li Qiye would know everything? There was an impulse manifesting in his eyes. He didn't want this news to spread.

"Don't bother thinking about it. It should be clear that I'm not afraid of anyone since I am sitting right here without any stress."

Li Qiye leisurely smiled.

Jianshi took a deep breath and smile: “Brother Li, you’re overthinking it. It would be good if I were to know but it doesn’t matter right now since you are my brother-in-law.”

“I won’t deny it.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“The Dongfang people will come soon. I think you’ll be departing tomorrow so take care then.” Jianshi said.

“That’s no problem, I can handle taking the blame. However, you need to tell your father that if he wants me to be a scapegoat, Huaiyu must stay in my sight. If I am her father, I shall have the final say in her fate!”

“Brother Li, I’m afraid I can’t do that but I can assure you that she’ll be safe.” Jianshi considered for a moment before shaking his head.

“You missed my point.” Li Qiye said flatly: “I’m not negotiating with you or your clan. You only have one choice and that is to follow my wish.”

His aggressiveness changed Jianshi’s expression!

“Brother Li, that was too arrogant just now.” Jianshi took a deep breath and said.

Li Qiye smiled back: “What do you think? Do as I say and take her along. I don’t want to let the child see too much blood, understand?!”

Jianshi’s demeanor changed rapidly several times in a short period. Though their clan wouldn’t be intimidated so easily, but Li Qiye was here alone and completely at ease. He couldn’t tell what the guy was capable of.

“I’ll tell them about your request.” Jianshi made up his mind.

Sure enough, Li Qiye was taken to the Dongfang Clan on the second day.

In fact, the Wenren Clan had no choice. The moment they took Lurui back, the Dongfang Clan has gotten wind of this as well.

Right now, the Dongfang needed the Wenren to hand someone over. As in-laws, they might not do anything to Wenren Lurui but an outsider like Li Qiye seducing their bride? There was no chance for forgiveness.

Both clans wanted to deal with this in a low-key manner. The Dongfang clan found out very quickly so the Wenren Clan had to hand Li Qiye over.

In fact, the Wenren Clan Master had no control over this matter. They could only hope Li Qiye would shoulder the blame, then they could deal with it quietly and defuse the misunderstandings.

There were many people waiting outside when Li Qiye was escorted out. Outside of Jianshi and his father, a bunch of experts from the clan was responsible for him too.

In addition, there were several old men from the Dongfang Clan. They immediately sent out unfriendly gaze at him right away.

Two experts wanted to take his arms in order to subdue him.

Li Qiye didn't become angry at all and repeated the same phrase with a smile: "You want to keep your dog hands?"

"Leave it." Jianshi ordered. He knew that Li Qiye wouldn't run away at this moment. He would have done so long ago if there was any intention of escaping.

A carriage slowly came about with Wenren Lurui inside. She was silent with a haggard complexion since she didn't know what fate was awaiting her at the Dongfang Clan.

The thing she was worried about the most was not herself but her daughter, Wenren Huaiyu. Alas, she alone couldn't protect her daughter.

The carriage was in front under the escort of the Wenren Clan's

experts.

“Brother Li, it’s time to hit the road.” Jianshi politely told Li Qiye. He even deliberately let Li Qiye stay close to Huaiyu.

His intention was obvious. If the Wenren Clan has agreed to Li Qiye’s condition, he must also not go back on his words and shoulder the blame.

“Good, I also want to take a trip.” He smiled and said: “Let’s go fast, I have to leave after dealing with this trivial business.” With that, he trotted forward.

# Chapter 1553: Dongfang Clan

---

There were many islands in this particular chain with large tracts of land. On a huge island next to Renowned was Eastern City, ruled by the Dongfang Clan.

A total of three powers reigned over this region: the Dongfang, Wenren, and the State of Soaring Hawk.

However, the two clans weren't a match for Soaring Hawk thus they had no choice but to work together. Because of this, a marriage alliance has been the long-running tradition. It forged a bond of steel that could last for a long time.

However, because of Lurui running away from her wedding, a crack appeared in the alliance. The two clans almost turned into enemies!

This was why the Dongfang required a reasonable answer from the Wenren Clan and demanded the culprit right away. However, Lurui has been missing for the last couple of years. It became a cyst since the misunderstanding wouldn't go away.

For the Dongfang Clan, Lurui was still the beloved daughter of the Wenren so they couldn't do anything to her. However, the other adulterer wouldn't be able to escape. Both clans wanted to use the blood of this adulterer to wash away their grievances.

Of course, the Wenren Clan deliberately concealed the existence of Wenren Huaiyu in accordance to Jianshi's wish. Because of this, she didn't go together with her mother but stayed by Jianshi instead.

Eastern City wasn't far from Renowned so the group arrived in just a short time.

A youth personally greeted them outside of the Dongfang Clan's mansion. He was very handsome and noble with a body like gold.

"Brother Jianshi, the travel must have been hard." He came up

and greeted the escort unit. He was especially polite towards Jianshi.

This was the Elder Young Noble of the Dongfang Clan, Dongfang Cong, who was once Lurui's fiancée.

In fact, Dongfang Cong and Wenren Jianshi had an extremely good relationship. They weren't brothers but were even closer. Because of this, both clans had high hopes for them. After Lurui married into the Dongfang Clan, the clans would have grown even closer.

However, the relationship soured after Lurui's debacle. Nevertheless, the two's friendship was still strong but they were stuck in an awkward position due to their clans.

"Thank you for your hospitality, Brother Dongfang." Jianshi gave Dongfang Cong a big hug. They sympathized with each other since they played the same role in their clan.

Wenren Lurui came down from the carriage as well. It was interesting that Dongfang Cong didn't become angry when his fiancée ran off with another man. Despite having a grudge about it, he maintained the demeanor of a noble.

"Sister, long time no see." He could only sigh after seeing her haggard appearance. He was helpless in this matter as well.

There was no reason for him to be angry since the marriage was decided by the seniors. He could understand that she didn't want to marry him. However, it was meant for the future of the two clans so they weren't in charge of their own outcome.

Lurui sighed in response and bowed deeply: "Brother, this was my fault so let it end with me."

In her eyes, it wasn't because of Dongfang Cong's lackings or flaws. She simply didn't want an arranged marriage and already had someone in mind. That was the reason why she chose to run.

If she had another chance, she would still make the same choice

without regrets. The only thing she hated was her lack of agency while being stuck between the two clans.

“The ancestors will decide.” Dongfang Cong stated.

Dongfang Cong looked at Li Qiye carefully. He wanted to see just who Lurui’s man was.

He couldn’t see anything special about the guy. Meanwhile, Li Qiye leisurely nodded as a greeting towards Dongfang Cong.

Dongfang Cong didn’t wish to talk and said: “Let’s go in.”

The Dongfang Clan didn’t wish for a big commotion so they kept it very quiet. It was a mess for both of the clans so there was no need to publicize this matter.

The clan immediately convened a meeting in order to make a decision with the fastest speed in order to calm the storm. After all, their clan didn’t wish to turn against the Wenren Clan either. Moreover, if the alliance were to fall, Soaring Hawk would take both of them down eventually!

The sooner they could solve this, the less complication. Afterward, both clans could maintain the alliance of past.

After making the decision, the ancestors from both clans summoned Li Qiye and Wenren Lurui. This was only to tell them the result.

The two saw the ancestors from both clans. Jianshi and Dongfang Cong were present as well with a solemn expression.

She gently sighed and knew that it was about to come. However, she was ready to meet her fate. As long as her daughter could be fine, she was willing to pay any price.

Li Qiye glanced at the ancestors and only smiled. He actually walked up to the master chair and sat down with wanton regards.

Such arrogant attitude made the ancestors ugly. Both sides angrily glared at him.

“I’m already a dead man in your eyes, can’t a dead man get to sit down?” Li Qiye nonchalantly laughed after seeing the glares.

The people present here snorted at this attitude but at this moment, they were more concerned about him acting as the scapegoat. This was more than enough.

Wenren Lurui took a deep breath and bowed: “Dear ancestors, this is my fault. All the blame is on me, I have shamed both of our clans so I’m willing to bear all the sins. May my life eliminates the grievances.”

“Lurui, you don’t need to speak for this Li guy’s sake.” One Wenren Ancestor shouted: “Your mistake can’t be forgiven. Because of this, the clans have decided to imprison you in the inner tower for the rest of your life!”

Both Jianshi and Cong were shocked to hear this sentence. Cong stepped out and addressed the ancestors: “Ancestors, she is indeed at fault but it is only out of youthful ignorance. Just let this marriage past and our clans can still be allies. There is no need for a life sentence.”

“Cong’er, stand to the side.” A Dongfang Ancestor spoke coldly: “The laws must be upheld.”

With that, he turned towards Li Qiye: “And you, purposely breaking our marriage pact and alliance, seducing a married woman, a crime deserving of death! You shall be decapitated to set an example!”

An agreement has been reached between the two clans. If Lurui escaped with someone else, then the fault was on her. However, if Li Qiye was purposely breaking the alliance by seducing her, then it would be a different story. He would bear the bigger burden of the crime.

Both clans chose the latter version in order to kill this scandal as soon as possible.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye smiled and casually picked up some fruit on the table nearby before leisurely taking a bite.

This made the ancestors nearly vomit blood from anger. They felt an urge to kill him right away.

## Chapter 1554: Further Complication

---

After finishing the fruit, he threw the seeds on the tray before wiping his hands. This only further enraged the ancestors with fire in their eyes. They wanted nothing more than to tear him to pieces.

“Would you like to hear my opinion?” After cleaning his hands, he calmly said: “I’ll go ahead. Why bother killing and seeing blood because of this?”

“Ultimately, both clans still want to keep the alliance, not wanting to break all pretense since you still need to face the lurking Soaring Hawk. If this is the case, then let bygones be bygones. The sky wants rain and a child wants its mother; just let them be.”

He paused for a bit before continuing: “Your clans are still in a marriage alliance, at least from the last generation. Thus, why the need to break a couple and force a loveless marriage? As for your Dongfang Clan, will you feel better after killing me, the adulterer? You still won’t be able to get a Wenren girl into your clan as a bride. As for the Wenren Clan, would you feel better by imprisoning your own daughter, never letting her see the sun again?”

“In the end, your Dongfang Clan will be responsible for this imprisonment. The grudge will still be there after the punishments are carried out.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“Junior, don’t bother trying to spout your nonsense!” A Wenren Ancestor furiously shouted to shut him up.

In this complication, the Wenren Clan was at fault so they hoped that everything would be over with.

“Nonsense?” Li Qiye shook his head: “I’m only showing you the correct way. It’s not like the alliance won’t be there without a

marriage. The powerful foe will still be there. Your alliance is not predicated on benefits, it is necessary to combat the existential crisis. No matter how you looked at it, your two clans need to stay together. When the mouth is open, the teeth will be cold...”

“Since it is so, why not be more benevolent and just let this thing pass? Don’t let this failed marriage leave a knot in your mind. Killing me and imprisoning the daughter from the Wenren won’t solve anything. Let’s be honest, both sides do not like the current situation but everyone should let it go for the sake of the future.”

Li Qiye’s spiel was endless and made the ancestors quite angry.

However, Dongfang Cong stood up and said: “Fellow Ancestors, I feel that this makes sense. Our alliance is not because of the marriages. We have been close for many years now with ties as deep as the ocean and vast as the mountains. Even without the marriages, our friendship still has roots from the past. Since this is the case, why should we turn a wedding into a funeral? Why not just let this pair be together? It will be a happy commotion instead if we can see past this. Everyone will feel better and it won’t affect the friendship between our clans.” Dongfang Cong carefully articulated in a solemn manner.

“Cong’er, don’t listen to his nonsense.” One Dongfang Ancestor immediately stopped him.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, started clapping: “Good, well said, what a prodigy. Your attitude is worthy of being in my sight. With such a heart, there is no fear of not accomplishing great deeds.”

“How presumptuous!” The Dongfang Ancestor could no longer stop himself from shouting: “Junior, we still haven’t torn you to pieces because we respect the Wenren Clan but you dare to run your mouth?! Take him outside, kill him!”

Some experts immediately rushed towards Li Qiye. For both of the clans, leaving him behind would only cause more problems. Why not just kill him now?

Li Qiye simply smiled and still remained seated as the experts headed for him.

Wenren Lurui could only sigh. She couldn't help him at all since she was having trouble protecting herself, let alone assisting him.

Suddenly, loud commotions came from outside. It sounded like fighting.

"What's going on?" The ancestors here were surprised and didn't want further complication.

"Ancestor, not good, Hai Yangying is here." An expert from the Dongfang Clan rushed in with sorry appearance.

The ancestors were alarmed after hearing this! Even the experts wanting to catch Li Qiye stopped and looked outside nervously.

"What's going on? I'm visiting in good faith but was faced with swords? This is the hospitality of the Dongfang Clan?" A hearty laughter came from outside.

Next, a youth came in with a vigorous aura and a pair of sharp hawk eyes, capable of piercing through everyone.

Two rows of experts accompanied him. It was clear at first glance that they were quite formidable and aggressive.

"Hai Yangying." Everyone's expression darkened outside of Li Qiye after seeing the youth.

"Dongfang Clan Master, you greet guests with swords?" Yangying smiled and said after rushing into the chamber.

The clan master and the ancestors here weren't happy. However, since he claimed to be a guest, they couldn't express their displeasure.

In fact, everyone here put on a serious expression as if they were about to head into battle.

Yangying was the crown prince of Soaring Hawk. Rumor has it that he was about to take over as the next king. Moreover, his

talents were quite great. He had the potential to become the strongest in the State of Soaring Hawk. Jianshi and Cong in the same generation were no match for him.

“Nephew Hai, it must have been a long journey. Please go rest in our esteemed guest quarter. The Dongfang Clan will treat a guest well.” The Dongfang Clan Master replied.

Though there has been constant friction between the clans and Soaring Hawk, they were small-scale skirmishes. An all-out war has not broken out so not all pretension and formalities were broken.

His sudden intrusion into their deliberation chamber was only met with swords. This was already very polite of their clans.

He looked around fiercely and aggressively. After seeing Wenren Lurui, he smiled: “Miss Wenren, long time no see. I heard you have been missing for a long time now after leaving the Wenren Clan and running away from your marriage...”

The experts from both clans didn't like this. They had a bad feeling with Yangying's appearance right before they could quietly end it.

Lurui interrupted him: “Prince Hai, you're mistaken. I'm born a Wenren and will die a Wenren!”

“Oh?” Yangying revealed a sarcastic smile. He turned towards Li Qiye instead: “[You must be Miss Wenren's husband?](#)”

Lurui became quiet after hearing this. This development was out of everyone's expectation!

Li Qiye didn't care at all about this new intruder. He picked up another fruit and took his time eating while leisurely watching the situation.

Yangying withdrew his gaze and smiled: “I came in order to see a trial of the adulterer. It seems like I have come at the wrong time.”

“Young Noble Hai, please leave.” The Dongfang Clan Master lowered his tone.

Yangying replied: “Clan Master, I’m not here to interfere with your internal affairs. However, I received news that your clans have secretly captured a cultivator from our Crouching Dragon Continent so I came to ask about this specifically.”

“No such thing is happening.” The clan master denied right away.

“But I have received information that this person is a cultivator from our continent!” Yangying was confident and pointed at Li Qiye: “But now, he is captured here. Why are your clans secretly capturing cultivators? I’m waiting for an explanation.”

The people here were alarmed after hearing this. It meant that Yangying deliberately wanted to make a big deal out of this publicly.

We’ll ignore the Miss and Mrs. problem for now

# Chapter 1555: Hai Yangyings Scheme

---

While the experts in the Dongfang chamber were shaken, Hai Yangying continued: “Clan masters, we are three great powers belonging to the Crouching Dragon Continent so we are responsible for maintaining the peace in this land. If your clans are capturing cultivators without just cause, this would lead to public unrest. Because of this, we need the Crouching Dragon Cliff to preside over this situation!”

This didn’t bode well with the clan members. The participation of the cliff might end badly for them.

“Nephew Hai, you are worrying too much. This is our internal affairs, not some secret detainment of cultivators from the continent.” The Wenren Clan Master lost his cool and said.

“Is that so?” Yangying smiled: “I think the opposite. If this person belongs to your clans then I won’t be interfering. However, if he isn’t, then this is an improper capturing of cultivators!” He pointed at Li Qiye.

The experts glanced at each other. Li Qiye naturally wasn’t a part of their clans. They wanted to kill him today but this sudden development caught them off guard.

In a short time, everyone stared at Li Qiye and hoped that he would admit to being part of the two clans. However, they knew that it was impossible since they wanted to kill him. Anyone would grasp on to this sliver of hope and immediately deny.

However, Li Qiye continued to eat his fruit in a nonchalant manner, content on watching the fun.

He didn’t admit to being part of the clans but he didn’t deny this either. At the very least, this made the clans heave a sigh of relief.

“Nephew Hai, this is our business, please take your leave.” An ancestor from the Dongfang Clan spoke coldly with a firm attitude.

Yangying wasn't too surprised. He wasn't afraid of this ancestor and smiled back: "I definitely wouldn't interfere with your internal affairs but what if it isn't? Recently, Her Majesty has been patrolling the continent. I have just received news that not long from now, she'll come to our island. If she were to learn about this secret detainment, what would she do? How will your clans explain it to her? I'm not trying to be an alarmist but I'm sure the cliff won't sit idly by and tolerate such a thing!"

He sneered at this point after making his threat clear to the chagrin of the listeners present.

Even if they could chase him away, when the Sky Dragon King did her round, he would report negatively to the king about their clans. At that time, they wouldn't have the chance to defend themselves. The experts here were in a difficult position that could lead to a disaster. If the clans aggressively chased Hai Yangying away and kill Li Qiye, then the guy could still report this to the king and bring about her wrath.

"What do you want?" Wenren Jianshi uttered coldly.

Yangying smiled in response: "Nothing, I just want to maintain the peace of our islands. If your clans aren't secretly capturing cultivators, then fine, give him a public trial then! This will decide right from wrong! If he is an adulterer who seduced the bride to break the arranged marriage, then that's worthy of death. I hate this type of scum the most as well. Moreover, this will prove your clans' innocence and provide closure as well."

This was not what the clans wanted to see since they didn't want to show the skeletons in the closet to outsiders.

Even if Li Qiye were to admit his relationship with Lurui for some reason in an open interrogation, it would lead to everyone knowing about their issue and they would lose all face in the process.

Moreover, there were too many uncertainties with a public trial.

What if Li Qiye decided to change his mind and bite back? That would have an even greater impact on the two clans.

At this time, the Wenren Clan made up their mind. One ancestor spoke coldly: “Nephew Hai, please leave. No need for you to worry about our problems, we can deal with this ourselves!”

Yangying disagreed: “I’m only doing this for the peace of our island. If your clans wish to do this by yourselves, very well, my Soaring Hawk and the surrounding sects will invite Her Majesty here to maintain order. I heard she has just arrived at Distribute Country so she could be here in a jiffy!”

He wouldn’t leave so easily after coming here since his goal was to disturb this matter so that the two clans wouldn’t be able to take care of it. Nothing could be better for his state than having the two clans at odds with each other.

The clan members weren’t happy with this comment. If Soaring Hawk were to team up with the other sects to invite the Sky Dragon King, the situation wouldn’t be favorable for them. However, there was no way back.

“Why not?” Li Qiye who was eating his fruit spoke with a smile while the clan members were stuck in a dilemma: “I feel that if he wants a trial, then give him a trial. No need to leave him out, right? I think we should go to the Field of Dragon War for this trial. That place has a good view up high so the heaven can listen to the trial. Plus, how could we not have an arbitrator for this great matter? Invite the Sky Dragon King as the judge then.”

“No!” Members from both clans unanimously rejected this idea. They couldn’t accept a public trial at all, especially not with the king presiding over it!

“Clan masters, the involved party has agreed to a public trial so the two of you shouldn’t refuse anymore.” Hai Yangying smiled. This was a great chance to attack the two clans.

The clan members were naturally angry and scared. They couldn't allow for this to happen.

The Wenren Clan Master repeated: "Nephew Hai, this is our internal affairs..."

"No, that's not the case, it's my problem too from now on." Li Qiye interrupted him: "If I am not a disciple from either of your clans, there should be a public trial. Okay, we'll go with that."

"Clan masters, any other comments?" Yangying gloated: "Since he's not your disciple, he has to follow me now since I'm responsible for his safety."

"Who the hell are you?" Li Qiye casually said while Yangying was feeling quite content with himself: "You're not giving any order here. Go, tell the Sky Dragon King to come to the Field of Dragon War."

"You!" Yangying's expression turned quite ugly.

"Okay, everyone can go now. Your two clans don't have any other choice so we'll do it like this." Li Qiye laughed and left before anyone could react.

At this time, the clan members couldn't do anything, not even capturing him again. However, they were relieved to find that he wasn't trying to escape and was still staying happily at the Dongfang Clan.

The meeting dispersed with the Wenren Clan Master furiously leaving. Wenren Jianshi and Lurui's group left as well.

He caught up with Li Qiye and said coldly: "Even if you don't care for your own wellbeing, think about your daughter!"

Li Qiye said flatly: "If you are smart right now, you will keep your mouth shut. At the very least, your son is much wiser than you in this regards!"

# Chapter 1556: Pleading

---

“You!” The Wenren Clan Master was becoming livid. This was quite a bad strings of misfortune for their clan so they became quite unhappy.

“Father, let me talk with Brother Li.” Jianshi immediately pulled his father back and persuaded.

In the end, the clan master scowled before waving his sleeve then left.

After these experts left, a Dongfang guard came in and spoke coldly: “Crown Prince Hai wants to see you.”

This disciple didn’t like Li Qiye at all. If he wasn’t under orders to only stop Li Qiye from leaving, they might have tried to teach him a lesson.

“No, tell him to scram.” Li Qiye was disinterested and waved his hand.

The disciple was caught off guard. Even Lurui and Jianshi found it strange. If Li Qiye wanted to stay alive, his best option was to work with Hai Yangying but he chose against it.

Nevertheless, after the disciple left, Yangyin rushed in. He even dared to rush into the main chamber, let alone this place.

“I am upholding justice and saving your life, it’s one thing if you don’t show gratitude but to even refuse an audience?” Yangying spoke aggressively with a stern demeanor.

“Scram. You’re nothing.” Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at him.

Li Qiye naturally knew the guy’s objective. He wanted to persuade Li Qiye so that during the public trial, he would lambast the two clans. Once successful, the clans wouldn’t be able to prove their innocence before the Crouching Dragon Cliff.

“You!” Yangying didn’t like this response. In his eyes, Li Qiye

was a nobody. If Li Qiye wanted to live, the guy must rely on him and beg. Even if Li Qiye was ten times more courageous, he still wouldn't dare to go against him.

But now, Li Qiye actually insulted him. This made the always imperious Yangying have a murderous flash in his eyes.

“Crown Prince Hai, since brother Li is going to attend a public trial, you should leave now.” Jianshi raised his voice.

“Oh? Wenren Jianshi, you want to oppose me too?” Yangying laughed in response: “If your clan's Gu Qiyu were alive, he might be able to fight me for a couple of moves. But you? No chance.”

Jianshi's eyes turned cold before such arrogance. Lurui also stared angrily at him.

Gi Qiyu used to be the Wenren Clan's Eldest Martial Brother who happened to be Huaiyu's father.

“What if I join?” Dongfang Cong walked in and spoke with a heavy tone.

Yangying looked at the two of them and laughed: “So just like the rumors, you two are quite close. I wonder if you can stay this way after this storm.”

Jianshi and Cong's expression slightly changed but they didn't react.

Yangying ignored these two and sneered at Li Qiye: “If you want to survive as a cultivator of Crouching Dragon, don't rely on these two clans. Only my Soaring Hawk will be able to uphold justice for you...”

His intentions were clear while saying this in front of Jianshi and Cong. Anyone who wasn't utterly stupid would pick the right choice.

Even though Yangying was running his mouth before them, Jianshi and Cong couldn't do anything.

“Scram already.” Li Qiye interrupted him: “If you want to live, go tell the Sky Dragon King to go to the Field of Dragon War!”

Yangying instantly became livid with a murderous urge.

Though Cong and Jianshi weren't Li Qiye's friends and resembled his enemies even more, they felt quite good to see Li Qiye's disdainful response towards Yangying.

“Crown Prince, please leave. Brother Li does not wish to see you.” Jianshi seized the opportunity and said.

Yangying snorted and gave one last glare before leaving.

Meanwhile, the duo stared strangely at Li Qiye. At this moment, they were quite confused. During the meeting earlier, they thought Li Qiye sided with Yangying in order to save his life.

However, he didn't give the guy any face at this moment. This matter was simply too bizarre.

Dongfang Cong asked him with a serious tone: “Brother Li, I don't understand what you are planning but you surely know that Hai Yangying won't save you. He's only using you and couldn't care less about your wellbeing during the trial. Even if you leave the trial alive, he'll definitely try to kill you to keep thing under wrap!”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye smiled casually while sitting down comfortably.

Dongfang Cong had no words to express Li Qiye's current attitude. It was as if he was the boss in this place. He looked at Jianshi and found the guy just as confused.

What could Jianshi say right now? Li Qiye only wanted to have fun while the Wenren Clan needed a scapegoat. But now, the development has gotten out of the two clans' control. If he knew this was going to happen, he wouldn't have brought Li Qiye here!

Of course, both clans were surprised at the how things have

escalated. The Wenren Clan wanted to kill Li Qiye, the so-called adulterer, to give the Dongfang Clan an answer. On the other hand, the Dongfang Clan needed the blood of this guy to wash away this problem.

They wanted to solve this issue as fast and as silently as possible. However, Hai Yangying came out of nowhere!

Dongfang Cong still didn't know that Li Qiye was fake. Only the brother and sister knew; who knows if the Wenren Clan Master was aware of this either. In fact, even if he did, it wouldn't have mattered. Li Qiye involved himself in this matter and was the perfect scapegoat!

Cong stared at Li Qiye and took a deep breath: "Brother Li, let the past be gone with the wind. The marriage alliance isn't something the juniors of the clans want. However, it has escalated to this level; the situation isn't good for the clans and for you or Miss Lurui either. Have you thought about when the world all know about this, where will you go to find peace?"

"What's your opinion then?" Li Qiye became interested.

Dongfang Cong took a deep breath and said: "Brother Li, I can convince the ancestors in the clan so that you can marry Lurui and the clans won't pursue this matter any longer. With that, you'll be one of us and Hai Yangying won't have a reason for a trial."

"A bit interesting. However, that's not what I want." Li Qiye looked at him and couldn't help but smile.

"Then what do you want?" Cong asked.

"You'll find out when the time comes." Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile.

Cong couldn't do anything about it. Li Qiye has seized the initiative. Even though he was staying at their clan, they were completely at his mercy. Due to Yangying's interference, it's not like they could kill him now. This would give Yangying more

firepower to frame them before the Sky Dragon King. That's when the big trouble would come.

"Brother Jianshi and Sister Lurui, you two should convince him. It'll be better for our clans." Cong told the other two.

Their clans wanted to take his head in order to end this private scandal but now, they had no choice but to compromise.

Jianshi stared strangely at Li Qiye and said helplessly: "If it wasn't for your attitude earlier, I would be thinking that you're a spy sent by Soaring Hawk."

"You think too highly of that state." Li Qiye chuckled.

"Brother Li, it's my fault for letting you become a scapegoat." Jianshi said earnestly: "Just like Brother Dongfang said earlier, as long as you are willing, we can end all of this. I can convince our ancestors so that we can all have a better outcome."

Li Qiye leisurely responded: "Why should we end this? The show has only just begun. It can't end just yet until I want it to."

# Chapter 1557: Dejection

---

At this time, Jianshi had an indescribable dilemma. Their Wenren Clan had to please Li Qiye now. Both the clans didn't want a public trial. Regardless of the result, it would end well for them.

“Brother Li, will you go easy on us? Just tell me whatever you want and I'll discuss it with the ancestors.” Jianshi was on the verge of begging.

He could be considered the starter to this whole mess since he knew that Li Qiye was fake. However, the guy was only doing this for fun while the Wenren Clan was in a hurry to end this. He didn't expect this reckless decision would eventually reach an uncontrollable juncture.

“Why do you think that this must be a bad thing?” Li Qiye smiled: “Maybe this is a once in a thousand years opportunity for your clan.”

“I don't see that at all.” He smiled wryly: “If something goes wrong, our clan will face a disaster. I'm the one at fault here, if you want revenge, just do whatever you want to me. I hope that you can go easy on our clan. It'll be very benevolence of you!”

“Alright.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve: “I know what you are saying. Just wait to see the actual outcome before crying doom and gloom. You'll see soon.”

Such a response only further perplexed Jianshi since he didn't know what Li Qiye wanted at all!

“Sis, you talk to him too.” In the end, he placed all hope on Lurui and took his leave.

Lurui didn't know what to say either. In fact, she knew as much about Li Qiye as her brother. Jianshi thought that Lurui knew him and could perhaps convince him.

“Young Noble Li, what are you looking for?” Jianshi said

seriously: “If you are willing to stand by the Wenren’s side, I can give you my life.”

He chuckled in response: “Have you thought about what will happen to your daughter after this mess is over? Will I stay as a fake forever? When will she find out about her real father? Does she even know now?”

Lurui became dejected after hearing this since she knew that this secret shouldn’t be revealed.

“It’s simple. If this matter is quelled, your daughter will never have the chance to come out. Even if the Wenren Clan accepts her, she’ll only be a bastard, a mortal, someone who will spend her life under disdainful glances. Even if you could take her away from this clan, what will she do? Follow you for the rest of her life without knowing her father? Even if she does, she can’t claim him either.” He said flatly.

Lurui took a deep breath and looked up: “I know that it’s all my fault. I’ve brought this on her. But the Wenren Clan is still my family and her father’s family. Given the chance, both of us will pay whatever price to protect it!”

“I know.” He spoke again: “However, your daughter has a fateful connection with me so I don’t want to see her being chastised as a bastard, spending the rest of her life while keeping her head down. Thus, I shall give her a chance.”

“I don’t understand.” Lurui was dazed.

“This is her fortune.” Li Qiye continued: “It’s just that you don’t know your daughter’s worth and potential.”

“But...” She said: “A public trial is not good for anyone. It’ll bring downfall and the only one laughing, in the end, will be Soaring Hawk.”

“I’ll be the only one laughing in the end. Soaring Hawk is nothing.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

Lurui became quiet from not knowing Li Qiye at all.

“Young Noble Li, that state might invite the Sky Dragon King. At that point, even if you have a plan, I’m afraid you can’t control the situation. No one can change the king’s decision.” She slowly speculated.

“We can satisfy your demand and end this problem first before dealing with other issues.” She requested earnestly.

She tried her best to protect the Wenren Clan since she would always be a part of this family. Thus, she was willing to give up her life when necessary.

“Why do you think the ruling of the dragon king will be unfavorable? Don’t have such a pessimistic view.” He laughed.

“Young Noble Li, maybe you don’t know too much about the Crouching Dragon Continent. In this place, our clan is only a small sect, not even part of any top ranking or be considered a second-rate power. Even the Soaring Hawk is only barely considered a country. You think the dragon king will care about a sect like us? Maybe Soaring Hawk and their allies could use this opportunity and get the king to destroy us.” She spoke seriously.

The failed marriage was their own matter in her eyes. This only related to the Wenren and Dongfang Clans. It didn’t matter how much of a scene they made, an alliance would still be there in the end.

However, the situation has escalated outside of their control. They didn’t mind being enemies with the Soaring Hawk. After all, tension has always run high. Moreover, their clans’ territory has been verified by the Crouching Dragon Cliff.

Nevertheless, they feared the involvement of this sect since they were only insects in comparison. Not to mention the Sky Dragon King, just any character of the elder level would be able to annihilate their clans.

In the trial, even if the king could issue a fair verdict, they would lose all face afterward. The king might even have a bad impression of their clans and abandon them or even remove their status in the continent.

“No big deal. We’ll talk after the king is here.” He casually smiled.

Li Qiye then waved his sleeve: “Let’s go. I have already decided what to do. Oh right, tell your brother to take good care of your daughter or I’ll hold him responsible if anything were to happen.”

Lurui understood that there was no persuading Li Qiye. She sighed gently and left.

Li Qiye smiled and looked out the window: “Pretty Xuan, you have been interested in your cliff’s bloodline, right? Then I shall give you a chance. An ancient lineage shall surface again from the depth.” With that, he closed his eyes as if sleeping.

Today, both clans received the news that Soaring Hawk and several great powers demanded a trial for Li Qiye. It was an official message as well.

This country worked quite hard. In just one day, they made several powers send a letter to the Sky Dragon King and ask her to preside over this problem.

She was on a patrol tour across the continent nearby. To everyone’s surprise, she actually accepted right away.

In fact, even Soaring Hawk found this astonishing. Their country has been wanting to complain to the cliff about the clans several times. Their goal was to rely on the cliff’s attitude to gain a favorable position before destroying the clans. However, their complaints were always dismissed.

They didn’t have that much hope this time either. However, a positive reply left them in disbelief.

Meanwhile, the ancestors of the two clans were frightened after

finding out that the Sky Dragon King will personally take charge in the trial. These old men were completely helpless in this incoming crisis.

# Chapter 1558: Field Of Dragon War

---

Field of Dragon War was actually a deserted island located inside the chain. It was very special because the bottom half was smaller than the top just like a large lingzhi mushroom growing on the ocean.

It wasn't easy to enter this type of terrain, especially for mortals who would find it hard to climb. Because of this, this island has always been deserted. The surface above was a grassy plain resembling a battlefield. It could accommodate more than ten thousand people so it was a suitable location for a public trial.

There were many cultivators from the nearby sects arriving at the plain even before the start of the trial. Of course, the two clans and Soaring Hawk couldn't be the reason for so many people to participate.

After all, they were only minor sects. Only a few powers would care about this trial. However, it was a different case when the Sky Dragon King was personally presiding over this matter.

She was in charge of the Crouching Dragon Cliff at this moment on top of being a renowned master in the Grand Sea. Meanwhile, the cliff ruled the entire continent; all the sects within were under its jurisdiction.

The problem of a small sect like the Wenren Clan wasn't worthy of the king's personal visit but she was indeed coming. This changed the atmosphere completely.

Because of this, so many sects came to participate in the trial. Even some sect masters came early. In fact, her coming was outside of Soaring Hawk's expectation. In the beginning, Hai Yangying only wanted to intimidate the two clans using her prestige. Not in his dream did he expect the king to agree to this trial.

Yangying became quite elated and proud of this success. In his

opinion, this was a once in a thousand year opportunity.

It looked like the cliff has a good opinion on his country! He thought to himself: ‘Could it be that the capital itself has heard of my reputation?’

He knew that he was a talented youth, the number one expert of Soaring Hawk. Moreover, he had a noble air on top of being extremely handsome with many fans back in his country, the star in the heart of many young ladies, the lover in the mind of many women.

Could it be that the even the Sky Dragon King fancy him? Yangying felt as if he was floating on air after thinking about this.

Everyone in the northern region knew that the Sky Dragon King was a peerless beauty on the same level as the Heaven Suppression Goddess.

If the Sky Dragon King were to fancy him, it meant that he would be able to soar to the sky. Yangying was having a grand old time fantasizing this. He could already see the day when he could embrace the beauty and become world-renowned with great authority.

He turned a bit silly and started to grin. It was understandable that he was having this thought. In fact, many sects were surprised as well. Why was the dragon king wasting her time on such minor sects?

Because of this, the sect masters and royal lords at the field became quite polite towards Soaring Hawk.

The Soaring Hawk Royal Lord, Yangying’s father, personally led troops here to maintain order and to be his son’s backing. If they could impress the dragon king, their sect could rise overnight.

“Royal lord, congratulation, a tiger never has a dog cub. Your son is excelling like a dragon among men. One day, he’ll rise towards the sky and the world shall heed his name.” A few sect masters and

royal lords were talking to the Soaring Hawk Royal Lord with the intention of flattery.

In the past, this tiny country wasn't worthy of their flattery. However, many were speculating that the Sky Dragon King might be wanting to groom this sect. Moreover, Hai Yangying was indeed a talented prodigy. Maybe he could earn her favor.

"Please, gentlemen, I don't deserve such kind words." The royal lord was beaming with this great opportunity for his country to shine.

Needless to say about Yangying, his confidence has grown to an unprecedented level. He felt as if he has just obtained some great influence.

"Who is the trial for this time?" Someone asked.

In fact, they didn't really care about the trial. The main focus was to present themselves in a favorable manner before the Sky Dragon King in order to get her notice.

"I think a disciple from the Wenren Clan." An expert who has caught some wind of this matter answered.

"No." Yangying immediately corrected: "Not someone from the Wenren Clan. He does have some relationship with them but he's just a disciple from our continent. However, he had a relationship with the Wenren Daughter and ruined the marriage alliance. Because of this, those two clans wanted to secretly dispose of him."

Many people could understand this. Marriage alliances were common among clans but this Li fella seduced the Wenren Daughter? They felt sympathetic that the two clans wanted to deal with this privately.

"As members of the Crouching Dragon Continent, we have the responsibility to maintain peace but the two clans are secretly apprehending a cultivator, even intending on killing him. This would only result in mass unrest. Thus, we have to uphold

justice.” Yangying spoke sternly with a righteous appearance.

The crowd didn’t disagree with this conjecture either. However, they understood that he was only using this type of rhetoric to push his own agenda but no one bothered to say anything.

The disciples from the two clans finally made it to the field as well. Li Qiye was part of the group with experts on his left and right.

They were actually protecting this time since if something were to happen to him, there was no chance for them to defend themselves. Due to the congregation of masters in this place, the clans became quite nervous, evident by their serious expression.

Not to mention the Sky Dragon King, just these great powers alone rendered them out of breath.

Alas, there was no other choice. If they didn’t bring Li Qiye here, it was the same as opposing the dragon king. Doing so would result in unimaginable consequences at the Crouching Dragon Continent!

Li Qiye didn’t look like a prisoner as well since they almost regarded him as their ancestor with respect to their current treatment. They hoped that Li Qiye could at least stay civil during the trial towards their clans.

After stepping on the field, Li Qiye looked at the sea around and smiled. The entire continent looked like a giant beast lying on the sea.

If one were overlooking from above, they would find that there was a mountain range crossing through the entire area just like a dragon. Its head seemed to be diving into the ocean. Meanwhile, this particular island looked like a dragon head sticking out.

He smirked for this was his goal. The trial was only out of convenience in order to calm this storm so that the brat named Huaiyu could have a bright future ahead.

# Chapter 1559: Sky Dragon King

---

After seeing the arrival of Li Qiye and the two clans, Hai Yangying couldn't help but smirk. This so-called trial was only a tool used by him to break down the Wenren and Dongfang.

He didn't care for Li Qiye's life. In fact, even if Li Qiye could survive the trial, he would kill Li Qiye if given an opportunity later on since the guy has offended him!

"The royal lords and sect masters are all here. You can start by telling them about how the Wenren and Dongfang Clan have abducted you." Hai Yangying wanted to take charge before the Sky Dragon King was here so he told Li Qiye.

The experts from the two clans grimaced. This was their business but Yangying has told the rest of the world now. It was quite a humiliating ordeal.

"Abduction? What are you talking about?" Li Qiye laughed at the complacent fella.

Li Qiye's answer made the clan members heave a sigh of relief. The ancestors asked Jianshi and Lurui to go beg Li Qiye. In their eyes, Li Qiye was Lurui's husband so he might go easy on them.

In the past, his attitude was completely unclear so the two clans were afraid that he would bite them back during the trial. This came as a pleasant surprise to them.

"I'm talking about the two clans wanting to quietly dispose of you after they captured you." Yangying hurriedly said: "Don't worry, you're not part of their clans. Any cultivator at the Crouching Dragon Continent is free from such injustice. They don't have the authority to detain or judge you. Just tell the truth and the sect masters and royal lords here will protect you."

The ancestors became quite ugly. The Wenren Clan Master couldn't help but yet: "Crown Prince Hai, this is our own

business!”

“Is that so? The involved party is present, why don’t we listen to him?” Yangying sneered.

“That’s right, we’ll take care of this, go ahead and talk. When Her Majesty gets here, she’ll give you a fair trial as well.” One sect master helped Yangying.

“Oh?” Li Qiye smiled: “But if I am the Wenren Clan’s son-in-law, am I still an outsider or am I a disciple of the clan?”

Such words surprised the crowd, especially Yangying.

The Wenren Clan Master immediately echoed: “That’s right, this is our internal affairs, no need for a trial.”

“When did you become the Wenren Clan’s son-in-law?” Yangying turned serious and coldly said: “The daughter from that clan is betrothed to Dongfang Cong, everyone knows this so where did you come out from? What does that mean then? Hmph, it means you are purposely breaking a marriage alliance by seducing an innocent woman, an unforgivable crime of an adulterer, intending to break the peace of the continent. The world does not tolerate someone like you so if you are truly this evil, you should be burn slowly at the stake to set an example for those who dare to disturb the harmony of Crouching Dragon! Villains in this place will be punished severely!”

Yangying’s eyes were full of murderous intention at this point.

Another sect master shouted: “It is true that a deliberate sabotage of a marriage alliance should be punished severely. A death by fire isn’t unreasonable at all.”

They weren’t interested in any secret arrest from the Wenren Clan. In fact, many of them were guilty of this. Yangying was only using this as a starting point for his own plan.

However, seducing someone else’s fiancée was a completely different story. All great powers used this type of alliance and no

one wanted such a thing to happen to them. Because of this, more leaders were willing to burn Li Qiye to death. This was a warning and an example to those who want to all the playboys who want to break alliances.

Yangying continued: “Though I don’t know what the clans have offered you but if you claim to be part of the Wenren Clan right now, you are still an adulterer who should burn at the stake!”

His threat was very clear at the moment. If Li Qiye were to take the Wenren Clan’s side, Yingyang and his supporters right now would kill him. However, if he were to bite back at the clans, there was a chance for him to survive.

Anyone else would know what choice to pick at this moment. They would implicate the clans for self-preservation. After all, these clans wanted his life in the past.

Li Qiye smiled and said slowly: “You are nothing, stop prancing around in front of me and scram before I become angry. Tell the Sky Dragon King to come and see me.”

Even the leaders here took a deep breath after hearing this while Yangying was astounded. The disciples from the two clans were naturally frightened pale as well.

This guy dared to bluster like this? Telling the Sky Dragon King to come and see him?

“Ignorant fool, I’ll take care of you now.” Yangying was livid being humiliated before everyone and immediately reached for Li Qiye.

“Bang!” Before he could grab onto anything, Li Qiye slapped him flying and smashed all of his teeth. Both teeth and blood gushed from his mouth.

Such a sudden change shocked and stunned everyone.

“Little animal, you want to die?! Go, get him!” The Soaring Hawk Royal Lord was furious and came together with several hundred

experts to surround and capture him.

In this instant, a declaration came like the thunder: “Her Majesty, the dragon king, is here.”

Everyone quickly kneeled down. Even the Soaring Hawk Royal Lord ignored everything else and prostrated as well.

“Greetings, Your Majesty!” Those present at the field were kneeling outside of Li Qiye.

Lurui and Jianshi saw that he was still standing and became frightened. Lurui quickly tugged on his sleeve and signaled for him to kneel down only to be met with his smile.

A woman descended from the sky. Her appearance engulfed the small island with an aquatic aura. The water dragon beneath her feet made her even more dignified.

Two old men accompanied her. Lights shot out from their eyes that would frighten any spectator with a glimpse.

Her eyes swept by the field and suddenly stopped on Li Qiye who was smiling at her.

“Your Majesty, please support us.” Hai Yangying rolled and crawled to the front before telling her: “This brat Li relies on the Wenren and Dongfang Clans and think he can do whatever he wants, boasting without shame and even besmirched you. I wanted to protect your prestige and went to stop him...”

At this time, Yangying was exaggerating in order to frame Li Qiye and the clans. It was hitting two birds with one stone.

The clans were scared out of their mind. It was over for them if Yangying could obtain his goal.

Meanwhile, the other leaders were indifferent. They wouldn't speak up for these minor clans. No one would care for their existence.

The Sky Dragon King stared intensely at Li Qiye while he stared

back with a smirk.

Lurui's soul almost left her body. She kept on pulling his sleeve while almost crying. If Li Qiye didn't kneel, a disaster would befall their clan.

“Your Majesty, this contemptuous person has no respect for your prestige. Allow me to capture him for you.” The Soaring Hawk Royal Lord noticed her stare and thought that she was unhappy with him. He assumed that this was a chance to win some merits.

Because of this, he and his group of experts instantly came for Li Qiye.

“Boom!” With just one kick, he sent them flying with spraying blood.

He didn't bother looking at them. He smiled and sat down on a throne that was originally prepared for the dragon king.

# Chapter 1560: A Beauty Brewing Tea

---

As Li Qiye was sitting on the throne, the leaders on the ground were gasping. Who the heck was this brat, daring to act all arrogant before the Sky Dragon King?

The Wenren Clan, in particular, was completely pale. It was as if they could see their own destruction already.

This wasn't only acting presumptuously before the king. He was even sitting on her throne. It was virtually treason, a crime worthy of death regardless of the location. It could be a nine clans extermination as well.

The worst part was that Li Qiye was more or less related to their clan at this moment. They would be dragged down in this mess as well.

“Brat, cease your disrespectful act!” One sect master shouted loudly in order to win some points in front of the king.

Li Qiye continued to sit there without a care and looked at the dragon king: “My beautiful Xuan, I came all this way to visit you, where's your hospitality?”

Some leaders were jolted at this moment. Now, the guy was even teasing Her Majesty? Their king definitely couldn't stand this.

Who would dare to tease a top expert of the Grand Sea with an exceedingly high position? It was simply tired of living.

However, the Sky Dragon King surprised everyone since she responded with a kingdom-toppling smile. The people have never seen her smile like this before.

“I knew you were visiting, Brother Li, so I personally brought some tea from my cliff. Please, take your time.” The dragon king said.

This was Li Qiye's old acquaintance, [Wolong Xuan](#)!

“A perfectly brewed Deep Sea Tea is worthy of a taste indeed.” Li Qiye nodded and smiled.

At this time, the two old men prepared a stove for the tea then ignited the fire.

The enchanting woman came forward with a peerless posture. She sat before the stove and personally controlled the fire. She poured some spring water inside to boil her tea.

A while later, smoke came out with the fragrance of the tea. The whole scene was silent outside of the kindling wood.

The leaders here were astounded and watched in disbelief. Who was the Sky Dragon King? She was the supreme ruler of their Crouching Dragon Continent. It was hard for them to see her once.

However, their king was brewing tea for this ordinary man sitting on her throne. Before they knew it, he looked like the master of the nine heavens, the greatest of all existences. Meanwhile, their king was only a tea maid.

This scene was too much to take in. The members of the clan felt their jaw dropping to the ground. They never expected for something like this to happen. The goddess in their mind, the deity in their heart, was actually brewing tea for this man.

After the tea was finished, she personally brought it to him. Such a treatment was unbelievable. Who else could enjoy this service from their king?

Li Qiye sipped a mouthful and clicked his tongue: “Good, good. However, there is still a gap compared to the tea from your progenitor.”

“So you have tasted our ancestral tea?” Wolong Xuan smiled and asked with her autumn waves eyes.

Li Qiye didn’t answer and put down the teacup before staring at the leaders on the ground: “Stand up.”

In just a moment, all these kneeling leaders were frightened. The ones who criticized him earlier were even more aghast and became paralyzed on the ground.

Even their king brewed tea for this person yet they dared to act pompous before him. This was a sect-destruction sin!

“If Young Noble Li has forgiven your rudeness, stand up.” Wolong Xuan glanced at them and said.

She had the bearing of a master at the moment with the prestige of a king. Her reputation wasn’t just all talk.

After hearing her, the leaders slowly got up. They felt their legs shaking with fear at this moment.

“I am someone who likes to hold grudges.” Li Qiye drank his tea again and chuckled: “Hai Yangying, drag him out, decapitate.”

The two old men didn’t wait for Wolong Xuan’s affirmation before pulling Hai Yangying outside. They knew of Li Qiye’s identity. This was someone who exiled even the Soaring Immortal Sect. These leaders were mere ants before Fierce!

“Your Majesty, please show mercy-” Yangying was scared out of his mind. His beautiful dreams earlier all shattered. Only an impending doom was coming.

“Your Majesty, please spare him.” The Soaring Hawk Royal Lord also begged for mercy on the ground.

“I will only kill your ignorant son.” Wolong Xuan gave him a cold look: “If Young Noble Li has to do it, he’ll annihilate your country. Your choice.”

The royal lord dropped down on his butt and became stunned.

“Crack!” The two old men didn’t hesitate and chopped off Yangying’s head. This was only a nobody. Provoking Li Qiye could even end with their cliff’s destruction, let alone a tiny sect like Soaring Hawk.

Li Qiye didn't care at all and continued: "Wenren and Dongfang Clans, come forward."

The same fear emanated across the clan members. All of them felt their soul leaving their body. They quivered while walking forward while the other leaders here didn't dare to breathe loudly. They were afraid that the slightest misstep would bring about calamity to their sect.

"Brat, come here." Li Qiye waved at the kneeling Wenren Huaiyu.

She looked at her mom while the clan members couldn't help but stare at her. They felt a bit hopeful since Li Qiye was Lurui's husband after all.

Of course, Jianshi on the other hand only sighed. He knew this wasn't the case.

Eventually, Lurui nodded and Huaiyu finally walked forward.

Li Qiye patted her shoulder and spoke flatly to the Wenren Clan Master and ancestors: "I don't care about the marriage alliances. However, this girl has a fateful connection with me. She has the right to know who her father is."

"Young noble..." The Wenren Clan Master shivered for half a day and didn't know what to say.

"Alright, clan master, I don't care if you are unaware or is just playing dumb. I am only a scapegoat, not your son-in-law."

"This lowly, this lowly one doesn't know anything!" The clan master and the ancestors hurriedly kowtowed.

"Wenren Jianshi, you should speak now." Li Qiye slowly told Jianshi.

Jianshi was also scared as well. He looked at his ancestors then the Dongfang Clan's members. In the end, he gently sighed and revealed: "Huaiyu's father is our Eldest Martial Brother."

“Gu Qiyu!” Not just the Wenren members but even some Dongfang members were stunned.

“Yes.” Lurui lowered her head and openly admitted.

Jianshi looked at Dongfang Cong apologetically and then solemnly spoke to Li Qiye: “Young Noble Li, Brother Dongfang, this is all my fault. I shall face the consequence. My life is in your hands now, Young Noble Li.”

Dongfang Cong sighed as well. He understood Jianshi’s intention. The Wenren Clan needed a scapegoat right now.

Li Qiye ignored him and smiled at Wolong Xuan: “What do you think about this child?”

Wolong Xuan used to be Wo Longxuan. After seeing Crouching Dragon, Wolong Xuan probably makes more sense

# Chapter 1561: Conferment

---

Wolong Xuan smiled at Wenren Huaiyu and said: “Not bad.”

Truth be told, there were far too many people with similar talents as Huaiyu in Crouching Dragon, so the assessment of not bad was already quite generous.

“Good.” Li Qiye smiled back. “I’m not taking any disciples, so let her join your sect and revere you as her master.”

Wolong Xuan was taken aback. Even if she wanted a disciple, how could someone like Huaiyu possibly be a candidate? She could only be a disciple of the cliff at best.

“Alright, if you think she can be my disciple, I’ll take her in.” Wolong Xuan solemnly nodded after returning from her thoughts.

Putting aside Li Qiye’s current status, just the fact that he was her savior in the past was enough for her to take in Huaiyu.

“Brat, go greet your master already.” Li Qiye ordered.

Huaiyu was quite sharp. It didn’t take long for her to understand the situation. She immediately kneeled before Wolong Xuan. “Master, allow me to bow my head!”

Wolong Xuan smiled after seeing the clever girl. She took out a treasure and tied it around the girl’s neck. “This is master’s greeting gift for you.”

She was too young, so the value of this gift naturally eluded her. Nevertheless, she was still very happy and bowed again before standing to the side like a well-behaved child.

Such a development left everyone dazed. The Wenren Clan Master and the ancestors didn’t expect this at all. It was something they didn’t even dare to think about.

Becoming a disciple of the cliff meant soaring to the sky and bringing honor to the family. Such an achievement was already

incredible. But now, Huaiyu had just become Wolong Xuan's first and only direct disciple.

But it was indeed reality. To the Wenren Clan, this wasn't just bringing honor to the family; it was a carp crossing the dragon gate to become a true dragon!

Huaiyu's position at the clan has changed dramatically. She was no longer a bastard and no one would dare to point their finger at her. She was now the jewel and pride of the family!

All the leaders watched in shock with naked envy glimmering in their eyes. They would be wild with joy if any of their disciples were to enter the Crouching Dragon Cliff. Becoming the Sky Dragon King's disciple was a lifetime of glory!

"Dongfang Cong, come forward." Li Qiye took another sip and said slowly.

Cong came forward without slight and slowly kneeled there without uttering a single word.

"You are a victim in this storm but I like your heart and consider you a talent. Because of this, compensation shall be made. I will bestow you a Heaven's Will Secret Law from the Azure Mysterious Ancient Kingdom."

Dongfang Cong's eyes widened in shock since he could hardly believe his own ears. Everyone from the Dongfang Clan was stunned as well.

They wouldn't dare to dream of a Heaven's Will Secret Law. However, such a good matter had just fallen down from the sky and landed on them.

"I..." Cong couldn't express his feelings.

"What are you waiting for, thank Young Noble Li already," Wolong Xuan spoke in his stead.

"Thank you, Young Noble." Cong bowed his head repeatedly.

After bestowing the merit law, Li Qiye spoke again: “Wenren Jianshi, come forward.”

Jianshi followed Cong’s footsteps and didn’t dare to say anything while Li Qiye grinned at him.

Being stared like this by Li Qiye left Jianshi frightened. He didn’t know whether it was a blessing or a disaster.

The rest of the Wenren Clan held their breath as well.

“Do you know your mistake?” Li Qiye smiled and said.

“I...” Jianshi was scared speechless.

Li Qiye shook his head and explained: “You might be a bit unwise but is still reasonably sensible. Today, your Wenren Clan can survive thanks to you. Very well, since this is also a type of fate, I shall grant you an imperial law from the azure kingdom.”

Everyone from his clan was at a loss for words. Imperial laws were out of their reach until this bestowment.

“Thank you, young noble.” Jianshi gratefully bowed his head.

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve: “Leave now. The play ends here today, let bygones be bygones.”

No one dared to utter a single word. Wolong Xuan waved her hand and everyone left including the two old men accompanying her.

Only Li Qiye and Xuan were left at the Field of Dragon War.

“Brother Li, if you are giving out rewards, shouldn’t you give me a few treasures as well?” The imperious Wolong Xuan smiled charmingly. She looked a bit playful this time around.

“Due to the origin of your cliff, you have no lack of treasures and merit laws. Plus, I have already given you a grand gift without asking for anything in return. This is already courteous enough.” He shook his head in response.

Xuan was startled for a moment: “You’re talking about the kid?”

She was intelligent enough to understand his underlying intent.

“That’s right.” He chuckled: “Huaiyu will be very helpful to your cliff in the future. She could even bring about a glorious age.”

“I’m not quite clear.” She said: “The kid’s constitution is okay but we have many like her at the cliff.”

“After seeing you again, not only has your cultivation gotten better, your bloodline has improved as well. However, there is still one more problem before truly reaching the peak level of your bloodline.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“You mean, the child’s bloodline?” She keenly reacted.

Li Qiye denied: “No, she’s not a dweller of the sea. Her father came from the dragonfish tribe so she has that bloodline.”

“Dragonfish? Brother Li, just tell me already, no need to build suspense.” Wolong Xuan was taken aback since the dragonfish tribe wasn't an amazing one at all.

She had a coquettish act at this moment. Someone as lofty as her playing around like this was quite enchanting. Anyone would feel their heart beating faster.

“Seems like you don’t think this bloodline is significant at all. However, you should know that their tribe comes from the depth as well. Their progenitor’s origin is similar to your own. More important, Huaiyu is showing sign of atavism!”

“Atavism?” She didn’t see it at all.

“Of course, it’s normal that you couldn’t detect it because she’s too young and had not cultivated. Her vitality is too weak so the signs aren’t clear. Later on, you’ll see it. From a bloodline perspective, hers isn’t as precious as yours but there is a lot of room for it to change while yours is having a hard time. Because of this, the stronger her cultivation, the faster her transformation. It

will have an incredible significance and show you the way when you want to reach the top of your own bloodline in the future.”

“Really?” Xuan was shocked at this revelation.

“Do you think I need to lie to you? The child is worthy of your tutelage so do your best. Her blood will not only show you the way. More importantly, when she reaches the top, there’s a chance that she might have the bloodline of a True Dragon. Don’t forget, a dragonfish is still considered a branch of the dragon race. Even if it is to a negligible level, the origin is virtually the same.”

“I see.” She murmured in a daze. In the beginning, she took Huaiyu in as a disciple in order to please Li Qiye. After all, someone of Huaiyu’s talents could barely enter the cliff, let alone becoming her disciple.

This was no longer the case after listening to Li Qiye.

# Chapter 1562: Trouble Approaches

---

Li Qiye enjoyed the sea and smiled while basking in the breeze. This was very pleasurable for him.

Wolong Xuan sat next to him and carefully examined this man. They hadn't seen each other for a long time after parting at the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. In the present, Li Qiye has deterred the entire Mortal Emperor World. His notorious reputation still remained despite going silent for a long time.

After so long, this man didn't seem to change at all. He looked quite ordinary and unadorned like a primordial state. He was still as nonchalant as ever as if he would never change regardless of how much time had passed; it wouldn't leave any mark on his body.

But then again, she found that he had indeed changed but she couldn't pinpoint the exact details. She felt that he was even more simple than before, that he couldn't get any simpler and common. Alas, such characteristics gave a feeling of being extraordinary.

He was a common pebble that was the same millions of years ago and would still be the same millions of years after. It would still be like this for billions of years into the future.

So many things have happened under the polishing of time. People came and went but Li Qiye wouldn't change.

It was this common aura that made Wolong Xuan think of an old saying, "if heavens and earth are ruthless, they treat the myriad creatures as [straw dogs](#)!"

The common man ahead was just like the heaven and earth. Under his ordinary state, everything else in the world was merely straw dogs.

"Beauty, got a good look yet?" Li Qiye finally withdrew his gaze from the sea and smiled: "I know that I'm crazily handsome but

don't be so infatuated with me."

Wolong Xuan gave the egotistic fella the side-glance that was quite intoxicating in appearance.

"Brother Li, you haven't changed at all." Her voice was tinged with emotion: "But we have. No matter how brilliant we are, we still can't withstand the grinding of time."

"You have changed indeed." Li Qiye smiled: "You became even more powerful and wise. This is the treasure given to you by time."

Wolong Xuan smiled after hearing his sweet praise: "You suddenly appeared in my Grand Sea after being gone for so long, I'm actually very surprised and flattered if you actually came to dote on me."

["That does sound nice. Maybe I should really dote on you then."](#) Li Qiye teased while caressing her beautiful face.

She let him touch her face while staring softly at him with her sparkling eyes: "You have been silent recently so many have been asking about you."

"No need to investigate. Yes, I was not in Mortal Emperor since I took a trip to Heaven Spirit to end some things." Li Qiye chuckled in response.

"I didn't try anything, you're the one telling me." She blinked wittily.

Li Qiye withdrew his hand and leisurely sat on the throne: "You really changed this time. Not just an increase in cultivation or becoming more insightful. The most important growth is your mentality since you have let go of your baggage. I can feel your comfortable aura sitting next to you. It shows that you don't have any repression in your mind."

She relaxed after hearing this and stretched. This amorous scene was too much to take in. She would only show this lazy appearance to him.

This natural and comfortable demeanor ended with her leaning on his shoulder: “About that, I need to thank you.”

“That’s too much. I did give you some pointers about your bloodline but no need to be so serious.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Wolong Xuan smiled faintly: “I’m not talking about this. It’s just that with your existence, my burden is gone. After seeing you in action, I knew right away that I won’t have the chance to become Immortal Emperor. All geniuses in this world are mere worms before your thirteen palaces, can’t reach the apex. I know that I won’t be able to keep up with you. In the past, I was ambitious. Though there were many exceptional talents, I still thought that I could fight regardless of the final outcome and participate in the Heaven’s Will competition.”

She sighed at this point: “But with you, the outcome is already determined. No one will be able to surpass you so I gave up. No matter how peerless I might be, I won’t be a match for you. Because of this, cultivation is my own business now. I don’t need to compete with anyone and will only walk on my own path while striving for personal improvement. I enjoy this process so there is no more burden in my heart. After realizing this, I became different.” She closed her eyes while leaning on his shoulder with a peaceful smile.

“It’s a good thing to let go.” Li Qiye said with emotions: “You’ll be open-minded and find everything else easy to accept. Life will pass by easily but unfortunately, I can’t see that so I have to force myself to go forward until the day I die regardless of the obstacles!”

“Logic will be gone if someone like you gives up.” She opened her eyes and shook her head: “You are different from us. We are frogs under the well while you are a dragon on the horizon. If you give up and can’t go any further, the world will become bleak. Someone like you should open a new golden age. It doesn’t matter if this is

your mission or responsibility, you just need to continue forward because you are qualified and blessed with this power. If not you, who will embark on this path?" She gently stared at him.

Li Qiye looked at the sea after hearing this. In the end, all he could do was smile: "Mortals have the happiness of a mortal while immortals have their own pain. So many people want to become immortals but can they find happiness after success? Can one really live an everlasting life of happiness?"

"Who knows?" She smiled charmingly: "I'm not qualified to become one, all I will be is an ordinary cultivator."

"If you're ordinary, what about the rest of the world?" He gently combed her hair with his fingers.

"I'm ordinary compared to you." She has abandoned her imperial prestige at this moment.

Li Qiye only smiled without responding.

"When you were gone, the Soaring Immortal Sect wanted to hear about you the most." She revealed.

"Soaring Immortal." Li Qiye didn't find this surprising at all. Though he banished their pathway back then, they indeed had the strength to come back to the Mortal Emperor World after so long.

"They won't let this go." She said softly.

"It makes sense. If they could let this go, it would be too wise of them." Li Qiye said with amusement.

This was completely understandable. Just think about the prestige of the sect? It had five Immortal Emperors. They had enough resources to look down on the nine worlds and frightening means. Moreover, they had countless experts and numerous Godkings.

The sect was a crownless king that has never experienced such indignation before. So many disciples were massacred on top of

being banished. They wouldn't be Soaring Immortal if they could swallow this anger.

“Not just the sect but even its successor has arrived. I heard this person claims to be invincible with a grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique?”

“Grand completion?” Li Qiye wasn't afraid at all: “Not bad. I'm sure the world will tremble after I slaughter a grand completion user. I'll be waiting for Soaring Immortal to come and find me.”

She wasn't surprised by his tone either. This man ahead challenged the Buddhist Funeral Plateau and expelled the Soaring Immortal Sect. He was the only person in history with thirteen palaces. Even a grand completion Immortal Physique couldn't scare him.

“You will have many opportunities. Their entrance is actually here at the Grand Sea.” She said.

“Here? They are talking to the Heaven Suppression City?” His eyes became serious.

“You are as wise as the sea, Brother Li.” She nodded: “I heard a heaven-defying character from the sect has come into being. Rumor has it that when this person came to Heaven Suppression, even their invincible ancestor, Gu Zun, personally greeted him!”

“It might be an alliance but no one knows if it is true or not. Nevertheless, the Grand Sea and even the entire world is worried about it.” She said with emotion.

An alliance between the Soaring Immortal Sect and Heaven Suppression City would indeed shock the entire nine worlds!

From Laozi, straw dogs were used as ceremonial offerings instead of real dogs as civilization advanced. The meaning is that the heavens treat everything the same; all are equal. No nobility, wretchedness, caste, distinction of good and bad, righteous and evil. I'm honestly not sure how the phrase fits into this context of

Li Qiye being simple to a primordial state. I'm guessing common = equal? The next line goes into it a little bit.

2. This is just a polite phrase/joke or a humble expression. "Overwhelmed by favor from superior." I modified the lines to make it smoother.

# Chapter 1563: Netherlord Hexagear Launcher

---

Soaring Immortal had five emperors so there was no need to elaborate on its power. Meanwhile, Heaven Suppression City had a monster that reigned for three generations. It was full of experts like lairs of dragons and tigers. The nine worlds trembled during the Black Dragon King's era.

If the two sects joined forces, all the nine worlds would tremble, not just the Mortal Emperor World. Who could actually stop such an invincible alliance?

“Gu Zun?” Li Qiye chuckled. Others might not know what this guy was up to but Li Qiye did. After so many years, Gu Zun was finally tempted into revealing his fangs.

Wolong Xuan quietly leaned on his shoulder without dwelling on this matter. There was no doubt that Li Qiye was prepared for this so no need to waste words.

“Brother Li, why did you come to the Grand Sea?” She eventually opened her pretty eyes and asked him.

“I can't just visit? I'm not necessarily someone who only comes for a reason.” He said in response.

“But that's exactly who you are. You're not idle enough to go around needlessly. Furthermore, this place is only a desolate island and you picked it out of all places. I don't believe you're here for no reason.”

“My beautiful Xuan, you are quite discerning.” He touched her nose and said: “You are right, I'm here with a goal in mind.”

“What's special about these islands?” She sat upright and looked around.

In fact, she didn't see what was particular about them despite

being attentive the moment she got here due to her suspicion.

“It’s not this island. The entire Crouching Dragon Mountain Range is special.” Li Qiye stood up and smiled.

“Our mountain range?” She was surprised to hear this.

This mountain range was the largest on their continent and spanned for a million miles! It was the main vein of their continent.

“Yes.” Li Qiye nodded. His fate palaces opened with clanking noises as laws emerged.

“Clank!” Nailing noises resounded. A golden law resembling a divine chain pinned deep into the soil.

“Whoosh!” A complete chapter with many floating runes appeared in the soil and instantly rose to Li Qiye’s height.

He pushed it down with his right hand. With the movement of his hand, the runes re-arranged themselves before disappearing again. Next, a large plate appeared in his palm, seemingly cast from some ancient bronze metal.

“Boom!” The plate fell to the ground and disappeared into the earth.

Right at this second, the entire earth quaked with tsunamis ravaging the ocean as if a gigantic creature was turning underground.

“Buzz!” A portal around the size of a window appeared on the ground.

When it opened, an extremely majestic aura of the world oozed out. It was completely endless and thick, almost taking a liquid form.

The opening of this portal made the essences in the deepest region of the world ooze out.

“This is the worldly essence of the Crouching Dragon Vein!”

Xuan cultivated at the cliff since youth. Her sect had control of this particular earth vein so she was very familiar with this essence energy.

She became dazed and said: “You... you have opened a hole in the vein!” Keep in mind that their ancestral ground was built at the end of this particular vein. Logically, only their sect could truly control this energy but this didn’t seem to be the case right now.

“Correct.” He chuckled and reached into the portal. It gave the illusion that he was reaching into the deepest location in the earth. The greatest mysteries couldn’t hide from him; all were within his grasp.

“Rumble!” The continent quaked again to the dismay of the experts. Even the cliff didn’t know what was going on.

Wolong Xuan felt something was being ruthlessly dragged out by Li Qiye.

“Boom!” Finally, he took out an item from the portal. It was shrouded in primordial energy that wouldn’t disperse. This item seemed to have been gestating with this energy.

The portal disappeared right after and the worldly energy disappeared as well. Everything returned to normality outside of the extra item in his possession.

“You took something from our Crouching Dragon Mountain Range!” She blurted out in shock.

“To be more precise, I took back something I hid there.” He carefully looked at the item and smiled.

“You hid it there and used the earth vein to gestate it!” She knew what was going on instantly.

Her shock was understandable. Their cliff was the master of this continent and had a great understanding of the mountain range. But now, they were completely ignorant of someone hiding a treasure in their territory.

“Don’t be surprised, there are many things you don’t know in this world.” He said flatly: “This earth vein is very special and plus, it didn’t belong to your cliff in the past. Furthermore, using an earth vein to incubate a treasure isn’t rare at all.”

She eventually calmed down and took a deep breath. This man was too terrible to hide a treasure there for many generations without being detected by her sect.

“What is it?” She took her time looking at the item and curiously asked.

The primordial chaos surrounding it was still dispersing slowly. She could finally see its shape after all of this energy were gone.

It was a bronze tube around three feet long and as thick as a large bowl. A faint glimmer flashed on the surface but it wasn’t made from a single piece of bronze. It was created from a series of precise and exquisite gears. Upon closer inspection, these gears formed six bigger gears embedded together to shape this perfect tube.

[There was a deep groove on one end of the tube.](#) Who knows what it was used for?

“What kind of treasure is this?” She asked again after finding the thing puzzling. It was more accurate to call it a complex work of art than a treasure.

“Netherlord Hexagear Launcher.” He patted the item with great satisfaction. He has spent a lot of effort and resources in order to cast this weapon. Finally, after millions of years gestating in the earth vein, it has finally come out.

“Netherlord Hexagear Launcher?” She has never heard of this name before.

“No need to think, the world has never seen this weapon before.” He chuckled.

“What can this thing do?” She inquired.

“Slay gods and devils.” He answered flatly: “One shot alone can turn your continent into ashes!”

I’m pretty sure this is describing a cannon. Tong 筒 means tube but a Huo Jian Tong 火箭筒 means rocket launcher or bazooka. I was thinking of naming it cannon but launcher is the safer word. To be precise with the raw, it would be a Netherlord Hexagear Tube, but tube doesn’t sound as epic

# Chapter 1564: Goodbye Kiss

---

Wolong Xuan's mind trembled after hearing this. Just one shot could turn the continent into ashes? Just how terrifying was this?

Keep in mind that the continent wasn't just a landmass. It has been worked on by their sect for many generations. The wise sages have spent many efforts to reinforce this land.

Not to mention the entire continent, their ancestral ground alone could withstand an invincible attack from an Immortal Emperor!

But now, this so-called Netherlord Hexagear Launcher only needed one shot to end them? Such power would cause anyone to shudder after thinking about it.

She knew that he wasn't exaggerating. If he said one blow, then one was all it took. There was no need for someone as powerful as him to boast.

"So what exactly is it?" She took a deep breath and looked at the weapon.

He continued to caress it: "In a certain sense, it's not a conventional weapon, not a life treasure or a foreign dao artifact. It's more of a forbidden weapon."

"Forbidden weapon?" She asked: "It can only be used once?" She naturally understood this classification.

For the most part, forbidden weapons could only be used once and would become rubbish after or simply disintegrate. A few could be used several times but there was still a limit.

Despite this limitation, it was much more powerful than conventional weapons and easier to use. For example, an Immortal Emperor True Treasure required a mighty vitality to empower it. One wouldn't be able to unleash an invincible blow if they weren't strong enough.

However, this was not the case for a forbidden weapon. It didn't matter whether the user was a Godking or a mortal, they could still use the strongest blow of a forbidden weapon.

Li Qiye chuckled: "It's not a one-time-only forbidden weapon. It can be used six times, one stronger than the previous. The second blow could be dozens of times stronger than the first."

She became stirred even more. He said that one blow could annihilate the Crouching Dragon Continent. So to say, if the next blow was even stronger, what would the result be?

"If the successive blows are stronger like you said, then how powerful is the sixth blow?" She had to ask.

He leisurely responded: "I don't know since I haven't tried it before. I also want to meet an Immortal Emperor to test its power because ordinary people aren't worthy of the sixth blow. In fact, it would be a huge waste to use the first one on a Godking."

"An emperor? You want to use it to challenge an emperor?" She found it difficult to breathe.

"No, you misunderstood." He grinned in response: "Not challenge an emperor, I want it to kill an emperor. After all, it is one and only in this world. It's not so easy to create a treasure like this." He patted it like a pet again.

This weapon was created from the most terrible death blood in this world on top of countless corpses and lives, even a Heaven's Will. It has been gestated for millions of years by an earth vein. Its power was simply unimaginable.

In fact, he was only speculating its power and hasn't tried it just yet.

Now, Wolong Xuan felt as if there was an invisible hand gripping her neck.

"Killing an emperor! Is it possible?" She eventually calmed down and breathed again.

She found such an endeavor to be impossible. In fact, most people in this world would share the same sentiment.

Immortal Emperors were invincible. Opposing one was hard enough, let alone killing one. This was simply daydreaming in the eyes of many experts across history.

Who could kill an emperor? No one. What treasure could kill an emperor? Nothing. Many cultivators would answer these questions in this manner.

But now, this Netherlord Hexagear Launcher could potentially kill one? This was too astonishing!

“Nothing is impossible.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “Just because others can’t, it doesn’t mean that I can’t. There are too many miracles in this world waiting for someone to make them happen. Common sense is just waiting for someone to break it.”

She had no response. Others weren’t qualified to utter such words but not him.

The original belief in this world was that twelve palaces were the limit. However, Li Qiye had thirteen. He broke an eternal belief.

Was there really a treasure that could slay an emperor?

After all, not just anyone can become the Black Dragon King who has reigned for three generations. Ordinary people shouldn’t be compared to him.

“Who created this weapon?” She was very curious about the creator of this regicide weapon.

“A very ancient person that don’t want others to know.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

She didn’t know she was looking at him. Of course, he wouldn’t reveal it to her either since this was his secret.

She gently sighed and didn’t pry any further. After a while, she continued: “If you are done with your business, why not come visit

my cliff?”

“Unfortunately, I have other matters to attend to in another place.” He gently shook his head: “When I’m done, there will be a chance to visit you later.”

“I’m afraid this departure will separate us like the heavens and men.” She sighed disappointedly before smiling wryly.

“My beautiful Xuan, no need to be so pessimistic. It’s not like I’m about to die.” He couldn’t help but laugh.

She stared solemnly at him and said: “I know but it’s pretty much the last time we’ll see each other.”

She held his hand and intertwined her fingers with his before looking at him in the eyes then spoke softly: “I don’t know what you are pursuing, Brother Li. I’m not aware of your ambition either but I know you are different from us. In my eyes, you’ll leave eventually. If it comes early, it’ll be in three and a half years, if late, eight or ten years...”

“I believe that you will soar above the nine heavens and disappear from the eyes of commoners like us. There will be nothing left worth remembering in the nine worlds for you so I won’t be seeing you again, hence the separation of heavens and men.”

“The grand dao is endless. You are right, I will leave one day.” He quietly nodded.

“I really hope that I’ll be able to accompany you one day to see the scenes of the world.” She continued: “But I know with my abilities, I’ll only be a hindrance. I hope that you can tread forward and stay true to your heart, then accomplish your goals in the future.”

“Yes, I will.” He gently patted her hair.

She then leaned on his sturdy chest and could hear his powerful heartbeat. It seemed to be one with the heaven and earth.

He embraced her waist without saying anything. She returned the gesture.

The world came to a peaceful stop. Even the breeze has stopped blowing.

“The path towards the supreme is too cruel.” He said with a tinge of helplessness.

She embraced him tighter and spoke softly: “You don’t need to be emotional because you are the supreme.”

Li Qiye gently sighed. So many people have left their mark on his life. Brothers that he could trust and love as deep as the ocean. Alas, he couldn’t stop for anyone.

Wolong Xuan eventually loosened her grip in order to grab his neck for a passionate kiss. She was no experienced kisser but there was an unrestrained boldness.

He held her face and gently returned the favor by infiltrating further into her wet lips.

They slowly separated after a deep kiss. Her complexion was red as if drunk.

“Go, only an even vaster world could contain your ambition. Only the endless grand dao is your true home.” She eventually let go and said.

“Take care, see you later.” He gently caressed her cheeks before smiling and left without looking back.

This was his creed, never stopping for anyone. Wolong Xuan murmured while looking at his departure: “Goodbye, my love. Only you are the one in my dream, the only one who can knock open my heart.”

# Chapter 1565: Little Sea Village

---

Little Sea Village was a tiny fishing town, at least from the view of the main continent.

It was located in a remote region in the Grand Sea, far away from the hustle and bustle of the cultivation world.

This fishing village was still under the jurisdiction of Heaven Suppression City.

There was nothing special about this village and its few residents. It seemed to be floating across the vast sea like a tiny boat, lonely and calm.

As expected, fishing was the main way of life here. It seemed to be an entirely different world versus the distant cultivation world.

However, this was not the case. Outsiders didn't know of the village and its secret. Even the inhabitants of this place weren't privy to all the information.

After leaving the Field of Dragon War, Li Qiye headed for this tiny village because he wanted to take something from this place in order to complete his Netherlord Hexagear Launcher, allowing it to exert its true power.

Due to its nature of being a forbidden weapon, it was too easy to use. For safety reasons, Li Qiye made necessary preparations after its creation by separating it into two sections. The main one was hidden beneath the earth vein while the other one was stored in this place.

Of course, the village itself carried a greater significance to both him and Heaven Suppression.

Nevertheless, this eluded all outsiders, especially someone like Gu Zun since the Black Dragon King didn't trust him.

Sentiments struck him the moment he set foot in this village

after so many years. Many generations have gone by but this tiny village still remained.

There was only around one thousand meter from start to end of this village with wooden houses on both sides of the street. They were quite old, seemingly built for many years now.

There were drying fishnets before each house and some boats. Some houses had strings of fish as well...

A dog barked after seeing a stranger like him entering the village. In a short period, the people here came out of their houses to take a look. There were old men and women and some children as well. They carefully observed this uninvited guest.

The village has grown accustomed to familiar faces coming and going. They rarely had foreign visitors so a stranger like Li Qiye attracted their attention. Everyone stared at him cautiously.

Li Qiye simply chuckled and leisurely walked on the small street towards the village's temple. He didn't get far before someone came to greet him. It was a muscular middle-aged man with a bright pair of eyes. It was clear that he has cultivated before, not just a regular fisherman.

"May I ask where you are from and where you are going?" He was quite polite.

"From a faraway place to over there." Li Qiye chuckled and pointed towards the temple.

The middle-aged man's expression changed. His smile became forced as he shook his head: "I'm sorry, that's our ancestral shrine, not open to outsiders."

"I know but I'm not an outsider. I want to meet the old man from your village, the real one." To which Li Qiye responded.

The man's eyes moved a bit. The smile became a stern expression.

“May I ask for your name?” He stared intensely at Li Qiye.

“Li Qiye.” Li Qiye calmly said.

“Li Qiye!” The old man was astonished while gauging him even more.

“Looks like you have heard of my name. Let me go see the old man now.” Li Qiye revealed a thick smile.

The old man hesitated a bit and didn’t know what to say.

“Is there a problem?” Li Qiye slowly asked.

“Well, the ancestors aren’t in our village right now.” The man said helplessly.

Li Qiye became serious and peered at him: “What about Zi Cuining, your Heaven Suppression Goddess?”

“The goddess isn’t here either.” He threw his hands exasperatedly in the air.

“They’re all going to Heaven Suppression?” Li Qiye could faintly guess what was going on.

“You’re right.” He smiled wryly and sighed: “Their group isn’t back from the trip just yet.”

“What happened?” Li Qiye inquired further.

The man replied: “I don’t know, something about a great matter in the sect. The elders didn’t tell me the exact details though.”

“Not smart at all.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Those old men can’t contend against Gu Zun. Gu Zun is pretty much a wily demon by this point. He has waited for many generations so when he takes action, victory is certain. Your old geezers aren’t thinking, to actually be running towards the city like bees losing their nest. Isn’t this the same as helping Gu Zun, allowing him to catch everyone with a single net?”

“The ancestors were pretty confident about it.” The man said.

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: "Damn geezers. What the hell did their ancestors teach them? Maybe it's because Gu Zun hadn't shown up for many years, that's why they think he's so easily bullied. Compared to Gu Zun, your geezers are still too inexperienced. He's a fox that has lived for three generations! Your old men are no match for him."

"How, how do you know?!" The man's eyes widened.

"I calculated with my fingers, not hard at all." Li Qiye lightly said.

Of course, the man didn't believe Li Qiye. However, he was worried indeed since the group has been gone for a while now without any news. Nothing came from Zi Cuining either.

"Well, since you know who I am, take me to the ancestral temple." Li Qiye commanded.

The man eventually made up his mind and left. He eventually returned with a key to the temple.

"Squeak, squeak..." He unlocked and opened the heavy wooden gate.

The two of them entered and were greeted with an incense fragrance. Judging by the incense burner in the middle, the people here have never stopped worshiping and honoring their ancestors.

Despite being a small fishing village, this temple was quite large. Others would actually think that it was a temple from a great clan.

There were many rows of memorial tablets to the astonishment of the spectators because there were more than ten thousand here. How could this be the temple of a small village?

More importantly, there were very few new tablets. The newest was around two or three years ago. Some of the older ones had indiscernible origin date. The ones at the forefront couldn't even be read. They were left here for a long time now so the writings have faded.

Li Qiye quietly sighed after seeing the tablets at the very top.

“Have you been to Heaven Suppression? How many elders are still in charge there?” Li Qiye stared at the tablets for a bit before asking the man.

“Well.” He scratched his head in response: “I haven’t joined the sect for that long so I don’t know too much. I just know that the goddess is in charge of the city right now.”

“That’s just Gu Zun’s strategic guise. He purposely tricked the old men into thinking that they still have some authority, that they had control over the entire situation. That’s a wily fox for you.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

# Chapter 1566: Taking The Treasure From The Temple

---

The man scratched his head again while being at a loss for words. He had heard the old men from the village talk about Gu Zun often but he didn't know much. He was aware that Gu Zun was an extraordinary character at Heaven Suppression and the old men were very vigilant about this person.

“Go and get some incense.” Li Qiye ordered the dazed man.

He calmed down and hurriedly grab an incense stack and lit it up before handing it to Li Qiye. Li Qiye accepted them with both hands and worshiped the tablets ahead, especially the ones without names.

He finally placed the stack of incense into the burner. Smoke slowly curled like a landscape painting, ethereal and mysterious. The middle-aged man was surprised to see this. In the past, the villagers would also worship their ancestors on the right date with incense sticks. However, no one has ever had smoke turning into a painting like this before.

It was too vivid with trickling streams and branches swaying to the wind. The cattle and sheep were on the move... In a short period, all of the things in the painting seemed to be coming alive.

“Phew!” Li Qiye blew towards the painting and the smoke engulfed the front row of tablets. They lit up with animated runes that eventually flew out of the tablets.

The runes floated in the sky gathered into a sphere to the astonishment of the man. Despite growing up in the village, he never knew about this unbelievable secret in this place.

The formation of a sphere was greeted with the opening of Li Qiye's palaces. A law shot out like an arrow and pierced through the runic creation.

“Boom!” This sphere resembling a transparent leather ball being shot. All the runes fell down like water everywhere.

This surprised the man. He wondered why Li Qiye shot through this sphere.

“Rumble!” Splashing noises came about. A golden spring suddenly surged from the earth.

He looked closely at the ground to see if there was a crack. The temple was paved with tiles but there was no gap on the ground. This golden spring was coming out of thin air.

The current was pushing something up. It was also made from bronze with a strange shape. It looked like a gunstock with a handle and trigger.

At the very least, the man had never seen something like it before.

Li Qiye smiled and grabbed the object. With a loud blast, the golden spring fell to the ground and disappeared without leaving a single bead behind as if nothing has happened. The man found it to be unbelievable.

Li Qiye then took out the Netherlord Hexagear Launcher and attached the barrel-like object. With a clicking sound, the two locked together. Now he finally had the complete launcher in his possession.

[It looked just like a bizarre pistol with an unreasonably large barrel.](#)

“Click! Click! Click!” The gears inside the weapon began to turn. After a certain extent, the six larger chambers slowly moved as well with a rhythmic and magical sound like a musical instrument.

“Such miraculous technology that isn’t available in our epoch.” Li Qiye said with emotions while holding the weapon.

The materials alone were shocking but the casting process was

incredible as well. The technology behind its creation was completely different from the rest of the world.

Such art didn't exist in this particular epoch since it came from the most technologically advanced Machine World. Li Qiye was the only one who knew about it now after a long period of accumulation and research.

This weapon was its highest culmination, at least in Li Qiye's eyes.

The middle-aged man was surprised to hear the clicking gears: "What, what is this treasure?"

"Netherlord Hexagear Launcher, the supreme weapon." Li Qiye smiled happily. After so many years, the complete version was finally out.

Meanwhile, the man didn't expect for their temple to be hiding this treasure. It seemed that it was waiting for Li Qiye to come and take it.

"The world has never seen a destructive weapon of this magnitude." He commented while patting his weapon.

He was quite excited at this moment and wanted to try the power of this weapon. Of course, he needed to meet a worthy foe first or it would be too wasteful.

After all, there were only six shots. Because of this, he wouldn't use this precious weapon until he meets a worthy foe.

"I hope someone in the nine worlds will be worthy enough for me to test it before I leave." He thought to himself while grinning.

The middle-aged man didn't know Li Qiye but he was creeped out by this smile from Li Qiye.

In the end, he put away the weapon and left.

The man closed the gate and quickly chased after him: "You, you are friend with the goddess? She has mentioned you before."

“That’s right.” Li Qiye nodded.

The man rubbed his palms awkwardly and didn’t know how to phrase the next line.

Li Qiye glanced at him in response: “Don’t worry, the old men won’t die for now and nothing will happen to Zi Cuining either. Before having absolute control over the situation, Gu Zun will leave himself a path of retreat. He’s not only a fox but also a very cautious one, preparing an escape path after every step.”

“I want to go to the city to take a look at the ancestors but I have to protect the village.” His face grew red with helplessness.

Even if he wasn’t very clever, he still knew that something has happened since the ancestors have been gone for so long. Alas, he couldn’t leave the village and had to anxiously wait here.

“It’s no use even if you go. Gu Zun isn’t someone a junior like you can deal with. Don’t worry, since I’m here, I’ll take care of it.” Li Qiye gently shook his head.

The man heaved a sigh of relief. Despite not knowing Li Qiye, he has heard the goddess talk about him before so he was confident.

He then asked: “Just how powerful is Gu Zun?”

Gu Zun was a popular topic in the village. Each time talking about Gu Zun, the ancestors became very cautious so Gu Zun left a deep impression on him.

“Not just strong.” Li Qiye chuckled and stared towards the distance: “His talent is incredible, only better than the Black Dragon King, not worse. I’m afraid few can be his match in the present day due to this.”

This is a rare moment when the author describes with modern terms. Even the mecha world didn’t have modern terms outside of gears. Also, I’m glad I didn’t name it a cannon or tube since it’s a pistol, launcher was ambiguous enough for me not to go back and fix it yet still sound relatively okay.

# Chapter 1567: Approaching Storm

---

“That’s preposterous!” The man blurted out and didn’t believe Li Qiye.

In his mind, the Black Dragon King was a supreme existence with an unparalleled position in everyone’s mind at Heaven Suppression.

But now, Li Qiye said that Gu Zun was even more talented than the Black Dragon King. How could he accept this?

Li Qiye smiled in response: “A better talent isn’t everything. For many ages now, there have been many wonderful prodigies. Some even had immortal bones but so what? It’s not like you need to have peerless talents to have supreme achievements.”

He paused for a bit: “The Black Dragon King’s achievements weren’t because of his talents, just his determined dao heart. After so much pain, he was able to create a new life after each generation. His tireless pursuit towards the grand dao is the thing most worthy of pride, not his talents.”

The man nodded but who knows if he actually understood.

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “Go now, the old men will return sooner or later.” With that, his body flashed and disappeared.

The man could only sigh and quietly prayed for the ancestors to return safely.

Li Qiye had left the village but not the island completely. He sat cross-legged on a shoal rock and watched the waves hitting it. This was a location not just anyone could enter.

Seeing the waves hitting the rock up and down and occasionally filling the cave beneath left him absent-minded. After a while, he withdrew his eyes and murmured: “Lil Blackie, don’t blame me for being merciless. The only thing I can do is to minimize the casualty when I slaughter the city. At the very least, I promise I won’t turn

it to ashes. That's the best I can do. It is your lifelong fruit but it's not like I didn't spend a lot of effort too. I was the one who laid the foundation when you created it."

He continued on: "All along, you couldn't bear to imprison Gu Zun forever and definitely not kill him. I know, you promised someone else to take good care of him. Unfortunately, the boy does not know the immensity of the heaven and earth. He had a bright future and could even become Immortal Emperor. It's a shame that he's too greedy!"

"Back then, I threw him into the eye of the sea because you beseeched me to spare his life. But it's different now. In order to spare the city, Gu Zun must die! It's that simple. In this generation, whether you can come out or not, I'm telling you today that Gu Zun is finished regardless of your promise. You know that I have done enough by sparing him once."

He was blabbering as if talking to himself. After some more time had passed, he smiled and said: "Blackie, your achievements are worthy of pride. It's also a shame that you can't surpass the particular blockade in your heart. Otherwise, your brilliant legend and shining figure would be up above the nine heavens as well! Live by this belief, die by this belief, perhaps."

Only the sound of the waves hitting the rock answered him.

"It's time to end the issues at Heaven Suppression. I can't guarantee you about other things, but after Gu Zun dies, someone even more suitable will take charge of it. Your inheritance will continue to have a long history from then on."

With that, Li Qiye stood up and instantly disappeared from the vast sea.

\*\*\*

The Grand Sea has been peaceful in recent years. However, this was no longer the case after the arrival of the Soaring Immortal

Sect.

Everyone in the Mortal Emperor World knew that after being expelled by Li Qiye, it has been quiet for several years until the return this time. However, it seemed that the sect didn't dare to descend in the Grand Middle Territory but chose the Grand Sea instead.

The atmosphere of this domain changed completely. Many great powers felt suffocated by this event.

Just think about it, having a sect with five emperors looming above their head was quite an uncomfortable feeling. Just a slight misstep could bring about sect destruction.

So many powers wished that Soaring Immortal would leave but no one dared to open their mouth.

However, the sect's recent actions, especially their interactions with Heaven Suppression, made the great powers understand that there was no way it was leaving any time soon.

On this day, a shocking news suddenly spread.

"The successor of the Soaring Immortal Sect, [Long Aotian](#) proposed to the Heaven Suppression Goddess!" Everyone in this domain heard about it.

Many great powers were frightened at this development. Before they could regain their wits, a second shocking news emanated: "Heaven Suppression City has accepted the marriage proposal. Their marriage shall be the start of the alliance between the two sects!"

"Can this be?!" Countless ancestors gasped and couldn't calm down.

For the people of the world, it wasn't that Long Aotian isn't worthy of the maiden's hand in marriage. However, this marriage symbolized the alliance between Heaven Suppression and Soaring Immortal.

No one wanted to see this powerful alliance in all of Mortal Emperor.

Soaring Immortal alone was frightening enough. One sect with five emperors surely had enough resources. Meanwhile, Heaven Suppression has reigned for three consecutive generations. What was the significance of these two behemoths joining forces?

The world was fully aware of the implication! It was an unstoppable union.

Anyone who blocked their path would be instantly annihilated, even an imperial lineage.

“Who can stop them now?” Many people lamented after digesting this information.

However, many older characters coincidentally thought of the same person - Fiercest!

In the present, this character was unbeatable and completely fearless. He even slaughtered the Soaring Immortal Sect without any hesitation!

“What is Fiercest doing? He’s been gone for so many years without any news. Could people be right? He had really left Mortal Emperor?” One big shot emotionally wondered.

Mortal Emperor has been quiet recently, especially the young generation. This was because Fiercest with his thirteen palaces has completely suppressed all aspiring geniuses!

Strangely enough, after the shocking battle back then, Fiercest disappeared completely without any news.

It seemed he has vanished into thin air in just one night. Some people have visited Cleansing Incense to inquire about him but this sect remained tight-lipped, unwilling to divulge his whereabouts.

This prompted the outside world to speculate about Fiercest. Some believed that he was cultivating in isolation to perfect his

grand dao. The moment he came out, it would be the day of his ascension for the throne.

Some guessed that he has left Mortal Emperor. For Fiercest, no one in Mortal Emperor dared to oppose him anymore so he needed a new battlefield in order to train himself through massacres.

Long Aotian is a chinese meme, especially in yy webnovels. This is the defining name for the most dominating character. In fact, it would be quite hilarious if Li Qiye had this name. Mary Sue would be the English equivalence. Long = Dragon, Ao = Arrogant/Proud/Overbearing, Tian = Heaven. Ao becomes a verb here when combined with Tian or a location. Something along the line of walking proudly and fearlessly across the heavens. As you can see, it's a pretty grand name. Almost as grand as Bao

# Chapter 1568: Pearl City

---

Heaven Suppression had great influence in the northern Grand Sea. There was even a saying in this place - the world obeys the clarion call of Heaven Suppression.

The strongest inheritance in Mortal Emperor was debatable. However, the answer was certain for the Grand Sea; it was Heaven Suppression.

Under the leadership of the Black Dragon King, this sect reigned for three generations. The Black Dragon Legion had also swept through the world before. Even imperial legions would try to avoid it if possible.

Though the king was no longer around in this generation and the leadership continued to change, the city's influence and prestige were still as strong as before.

Its territory was still vast and difficult to calculate in its entirety.

There was another belief in this domain. If someone were to divide the Grand Sea into six parts, the city alone would have full control of one. Thus, it commanded countless sects and kingdoms.

The Pearl Archipelago was under Heaven Suppression's jurisdiction, a part of its main branch.

Among the amazing number of sects and kingdoms under its control, there were all kinds of relations. Some were created by disciples of the city while others were erected by the descendants of the Black Dragon Legion's members. All of them more or less belonged to the city.

This wasn't the case for the Pearl Archipelago. This location was very crucial and under the control of an important branch. It can even be said that there were times when the archipelago didn't need to listen to the city due to its special position.

Just like its name, this was considered the pearl of the Grand Sea.

This archipelago gave birth to many talents. There were hidden dragons and crouching tigers everywhere; the paradise of experts.

It had a territory of one million miles consisting of numerous islands. Looking down from the sky, the interconnected islands looked like a formation with an unbelievable level of complexity.

They wouldn't believe that it was formed naturally. If this was the case, it would be too incredible. But on the other hand, a person capable of changing the terrain of this magnitude would be frightening as well.

After leaving the village, Li Qiye crossed through space and instantly arrived at the Pearl Archipelago. This particular trip was very important to him.

In fact, coming to Heaven Suppression and killing Gu Zun wasn't too crucial. It was only part of the trip, a trivial matter. However, this wasn't the case for the Pearl Archipelago. He came here to take a unique and peerless item across history.

Though he didn't hide it in this place, it was a very important node since it was the location of a fortified seal. In Li Qiye's eyes, nothing could be used to measure its worth.

In his millions of years, he paid the greatest price for this particular item.

Immortal Emperors and Immortal Monarchs would do anything for this item because it was worth it. It had an unfathomable power and could destroy everything.

This item didn't belong to the nine worlds! Li Qiye mustered all of his abilities and traveled everywhere before finally finding this item. Afterward, he hid it in a secret region in the nine worlds.

For example, the Black Dragon King knew where he hid the Netherlord Hexagear Launcher. Or, he would tell another emperor about the location of a different treasure.

This was the only thing he kept to himself. He sealed it for an

eternity so that he would be the only one who knew of its location. He knew full well that thing wasn't usable. Once resorting to it, everything would be over and only ashes would be left.

Nevertheless, its destructive power wasn't why it was precious. The true value lies in its effect as a deterrent since he would never use it carelessly.

He hovered above the sky and looked down at the archipelago. A smile came on his face the moment he saw the high pagoda and the familiar sceneries: "Pearl Archipelago, what a fortress."

Having said that, he landed on the ground. There were many islands but the most important was still the main Pearl Isle at the center. Pearl City in this spot was the core of the archipelago. The walls were built with divine stones. Even the most ignorant would understand how fortified it was.

The city was being heavily guarded. Anyone entering would be subjected to a strict examination and questioning. Suspicious people were not allowed entry.

In fact, this wasn't the case normally but it was different now. Sometimes, even the city lord herself would come for questioning.

There were many people lining up outside of the city to Li Qiye's amusement. It wasn't surprising for this to happen after the matter at Heaven Suppression.

When it was Li Qiye's turn, two guards stood in front and two behind him as if they were afraid of him suddenly causing trouble.

"Where are you from? Which place in Pearl are you heading to?" One guard asked with a grave tone.

"From where I should and to where I should." Li Qiye chuckled and answered.

Such attitude made the guards unhappy. The leader uttered coldly: "Don't run your mouth. What's your name?"

Li Qiye glanced at him leisurely and asked a question instead: “Who is in charge of Pearl right now?”

“Who are you!” The guards’ expression worsened. One guard was already pointing his spear at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye didn’t seem to mind at all and smiled: “I would like to see your boss.”

“Speak, who are you, which sect are you from?!” The leader immediately shouted with his hand gripping his sword hilt. If Li Qiye dared to move, he would cut him down instantly.

Li Qiye slightly raised his brow but he was still in a relatively good mood.

“Don’t be disrespectful.” A voice disrupted the high tension. This voice was clear and charming yet unquestionable as well.

A woman walked out, dressed in a five-colored skirt that accentuated her beauty. Her brows were sharp with eyes bright like the stars. She had a stately and dignified appearance despite the long skirt.

This noble woman also emitted a five-colored aura like a swaying feathery tail. She looked just like a beautiful peacock. When she spread her tail, it could attract everyone’s eyes.

“City Lord.” The guards respectfully bowed after seeing her.

“No need for formality.” She gently waved her sleeve. A royal aura accompanied her each and every move.

As the guards were standing up, she glanced at Li Qiye with a sword-like stare.

# Chapter 1569: Small Courtyard

---

Li Qiye was unmoved by her sharp eyes. He responded by looking her up and down with a carefree gaze as if he wanted to see every inch of her flesh.

Such wanton attitude enraged the guards. Their city lord was noble in their eyes; such disrespect was unacceptable.

“I am the Pearl City Lord. May I ask why you want to see me?” She slowly said with a dignified and unquestionable tone.

After gauging the woman, he smiled and shook his head: “Unfortunately, you’re not who I want to see. If Lu Zhangsun is still around, I want to see him.”

Her expression slightly changed before responding: “If you have some business, it’s fine to talk to me.”

She was the Peacock Bright Monarch, one of the strongest disciples from Heaven Suppression with a preeminent position.

He only smiled and said: “Can I go in now?”

She stared at him and eventually answered: “Yes, Pearl City is always open. You can come and go as you please.”

He entered without looking at her again. Meanwhile, her eyes became profound as she slightly tilted her head in contemplation.

Despite the state of vigilance, the city was still very lively with people everywhere on the streets. The crowded nature of the street naturally caused a lot of perspiration. It seemed that the city wasn’t affected at all by the current situation.

After all, this was the largest city in this sea region. Many cultivators and mortals were running around here for trading and gathering necessary materials.

Li Qiye leisurely strolled through the familiar streets. Eventually, he came to a remote location with only a few old buildings. The

majority of them were ruined. It seemed that this place was prosperous once but it has fallen for a long time with weeds growing everywhere.

He made his way before a little courtyard with only two or three rooms. The architecture was very dated.

There were two pine trees growing here, one on the left and the other right. They weren't that large but stood completely straight. Their barks were quite thick, like dragon scales. They looked like two young dragons with horns.

He gently sighed again, lamenting the passage of time. Back then, he personally planted these trees here after taking them from a dangerous location. In the blink of an eye, they grew up so fast and have even become divine.

He patted the both of them and was met with the rustling of their branches as if they were answering him.

He smiled back at them. Though the world didn't always go as he wanted, some things still remained. The entrance consisted of two old wooden doors with many holes on them because of insects. Who knows how many worms have gotten their belly full throughout the years in this place?

They weren't locked so Li Qiye pushed softly and opened them. He entered the little courtyard and they closed on their own.

There was actually an abundance of flowers inside. Such a tiny courtyard actually had an impressive energy and gave off a comfortable feeling.

He looked up and saw an old man noisily sweeping the leaves on the ground.

The hunchback old man dressed humbly while holding a bamboo broom. He looked quite feeble like a candle in the wind but he was very meticulous in his cleaning. Not one leaf was left behind.

There was also a fountain but it was dried up now. No water was

coming out as Li Qiye walked closer. It was made from ordinary stones with many decoration pebbles inside. They scattered randomly as if someone had picked them up from a river and threw them in there.

He smiled and squatted down to place the pebbles in a different manner like a playful child. He carefully arranged them together one by one.

As he piled them up, the old man continued to sweep without looking over at all. It was as if the guy was deaf and didn't notice Li Qiye.

The two did their separate thing so the courtyard became quite peaceful. It didn't matter how vast the world was or what was going on, it couldn't disturb the serenity of this place. This tiny location has escaped from the rest of the world.

A while later, Li Qiye finally finished placing all the pebbles. The neatly placed formation resembled an old picture depicting sparkling waves as if this fountain was full of water again.

“Splash!” Water suddenly gushed out of the dried fountain. It was a refreshing moistness - full of life. Just a little later, the fountain was drowned with water and rippling waves. He washed his hand carefully as if wanting to clean every single spot. After he made contact, an unbelievable change happened. The clear water suddenly became golden in its entirety.

Anyone would think of the popular saying after seeing this - golden spring gushing from the earth.

The old man froze for a bit and finally looked up at Li Qiye. His muddled eyes became extremely bright but this didn't last long.

He put down his bamboo broom and walked into a room. A while later, he came out with a key in his hand while walking towards a different direction. Li Qiye chuckled and followed him.

The old man entered an alleyway with a small hut at the end. It

was locked with a rusted iron padlock. It seemed as if just a bit of force could break this lock.

With some clicking sound, the old man seemed to need all of his strength in order to open it. After accomplishing his task, he turned and left without looking at Li Qiye at all.

Li Qiye didn't chat either. He pushed the wooden door open and went inside.

It was dark inside this little hut and he walked straight into a wall. However, he kept on walking.

Oddly enough, he immediately crossed through the wall. Before him was a majestic palace, the place where a king of the nine heavens would reside.

There was a chair decorated with draconic symbols in this palace. It was as if only the ultimate supreme would be able to sit on it. Li Qiye didn't hesitate at all and sat down. He then turned the armrest of the chair. With a whooshing sound, he instantly disappeared.

At the next moment, he turned up in a desolate region with a lone hill. Old vines grew as far as the eye can see; beasts were howling everywhere.

He perused the scene and sighed to say: "One of the earliest lairs, how many times have I slumbered here?"

His fate palaces opened and a dao portal surfaced. It shined onto the hill and with a rumbling noise, half of the hill moved to reveal a cave.

There were three words carved on this cave - Allheaven Grotto!

# Chapter 1570: Allheaven Grotto

---

Allheaven Grotto was one of the oldest and longest lasting lairs of Li Qiye. He had taken his slumbers here more than just once.

It was very secretive and few people have found it. Arcane Guru used to be a mouse in this place and Li Qiye later threw it out. It then cultivated into a demon using the dao.

Because of this, the guru was very interested in Li Qiye's stories and always researched more about him. The demon found many amazing things while tracing Li Qiye's path.

The three characters lit up once Li Qiye came to the entrance. Rays of light locked around his head. Moreover, a terrible formation emerged on this hill with thunder tribulations refined into heavenly swords. Each sword could easily render Godkings into ashes.

A true mantra came out from his palaces. With that, the rays locking his head disappeared along with the formation as if nothing has happened.

In fact, that was very risky just now, at least for the outsiders. Without his true mantra, any intruder would be annihilated instantly.

"Click-" The heavy gate of the grotto finally opened and closed after he came in. At the same time, the two halves of the hill came together again. No one looking from the outside would know about the existence of this amazing grotto inside the hill.

The place itself was quite large while bathed in a gentle light. One would find rows of shelves made from sacred wood in this place. Decay was virtually impossible for them.

Jade scrolls and boxes were everywhere on the shelves. The boxes came in all shapes and forms as well. Some were made from bronze, gold, or wood. Some were locked while others were left

open but they still emitted a faint glow. It came from the treasures themselves, not the boxes.

A few of them didn't have any light but when one got closer, they would feel a terrible and chilling divinity. There was no need to open them to understand that there were ominous weapons within.

Without a doubt, the best artifacts were contained within all of these boxes.

The jade scrolls were arranged in an orderly fashion as well. Some were covered in dust but one could still see the words "secret laws", "ultimate techniques", and "heavenly arts".

Li Qiye didn't look at these treasures. He was the one who gathered them so he knew them all too well. Moreover, he didn't plan on touching this treasury either since he had ample treasures and merit laws at this moment.

In fact, he even left a few items to this place. Recently, after destroying the Ancestral Terra and the other lineages, he had too many treasures. They had many generations of accumulation to come up with so much.

Of course, he would welcome as many as possible. After all, grooming an Immortal Emperor wasn't so easy. It needed a great number of resources. This was especially true when creating a legion.

Back when he was the Dark Crow, he wouldn't have been able to create invincible legions like Azure Dragon or Silver Fox without the necessary resources.

Finally, he entered the deepest part of the grotto. There was a special dao platform here. There was no portal, only floating runes. They were quite faint and didn't move at all.

He raised both hands while standing on the platform then poured his vitality inside. With this channeling, a magnificent amount of

energy like a true dragon moved around the platform. It also contained the profundity of the grand dao; only this would wake up the platform.

As the channeling speed increased, an explosion finally happened. The vitality in the platform soared to the sky and stained all the suspended runes red.

With a metallic noise, all the runes lit up and came back to life. They started to fly around in a chaotic manner. He had to arrange the runes directly with his hands.

He did this faster and faster before completely arranging them to his whim. A chapter was finally formed by the runes.

After this chapter came out, a majestic power poured from the platform itself. With a loud bang, the complete chapter instantly shattered and the runes scattered down on the ground. In this split second, Li Qiye's body flashed and vanished instantly. He was teleported away.

In an unknown space, there was another old dao platform. It suddenly lit up and Li Qiye emerged in this place.

A round mirror appeared in his mind. Of course, this wasn't a treasure at all but a type of astral platform. When his mirror illuminated on the physical platform, writings materialized on it and fused together with the writings on his astral platform.

"Buzz!" A new secret passage suddenly appeared with the emergence of golden paths leading to all directions with unbelievable speed.

These golden paths traveled as far as the eye could see and crossed through the entire world. It wasn't a real pathway since it was made from different nodes. This meant that each of the nodes represented a particular coordinate.

Thus, it could lead to anywhere in the world as long as one found the right node. It was Li Qiye's secret passage capable of going to

any existing location. It took him several generations and countless treasures to create. In the beginning, he meant to use it for swift withdrawal and to avoid the Ancient Ming's pursuit during their uprising.

After the Ancient Ming's destruction, he perfected this secret passage even more. In the past, it could only lead to safe locations but now, it could go virtually anywhere.

Due to its incredible foundation, it utilized a heaven-defying method to evade the boundary of the nine worlds and create its unique space. This meant that even if the nine worlds were sealed, the passage would still be unaffected.

However, he wouldn't use it unless there was no other choice. Very few others knew about it. Even if he allowed for his trusted confidants to use it, he would only tell them a few nodes. He alone understood the nodes and their respective coordinates.

In fact, this passage wasn't only meant for traveling. It also hid another astounding secret. A faint smile could be seen on his face while looking at the golden pathways leading everywhere.

He instantly picked a node and chose the coordinates. With a buzzing sound, he disappeared again and was transmitted into the nine worlds.

This was a barren location with thousand miles of dry soil. It seemed there was nothing here, a clear lack of life and sound.

The sand rustled as he dug the ground beneath him. There was a symbol down there that looked like a large dragon horn. It looked infused on the ground and would never disappear regardless of how much polishing was done.

# Chapter 1571: Peacock Bright Monarch

---

The dragon horn symbol put a smile on his face. A small law the size of a silk string with a faint glimmer came out of his finger.

It drilled into the symbol like a spirit snake and emitted a golden glow, changing the symbol into the same shade.

Li Qiye nodded approvingly after seeing this before vanishing into thin air. The secret passage had teleported him again.

In the next second, it was an area full of red and scorching lava with a temperature capable of melting everything.

He pushed down on the lava surface and revealed an identical symbol of a dragon horn before doing the same action with his finger. Another small law came out and lit up the symbol again...

This process was continued in many locations. One was a mountainous region and another was under the ocean. He even went into a large star...

All of these places had the same symbol that was eventually lit up by him. They scattered all over the world.

Finally, he came back to the secret passage and was transported to a large planet, seemingly occupied by a great dragon. He was standing on a platform with a large dragon horn.

This was the real thing and looked like it belonged to a True Dragon, surely a priceless treasure. If it was used to craft a weapon, the result would be as amazing as any Immortal Emperor True Treasure.

“Wooooo-” Li Qiye blew on the horn. The melodious horn was powerful as if it could echo across the nine heavens. Everyone could hear this clarion call.

With this cry, the individual node transmitted the sound. In a short time, it seemed like thousands of True Dragons were

howling. Even Godkings would piss their pants from fear.

The symbols in all the different locations resonated as well but they sounded like little whispers.

In a short period, the same horn resounded across the world. Li Qiye continued for a long time as if wanting to send a message.

Eventually, he put down the dragon horn and looked at the secret passage with a sigh: “I hope no one in the future will use this pathway again.”

Only a few old confidants of his knew about it. If anyone were to use it in the future, it would mean that they were experiencing a disaster, one that would threaten the nine worlds so they needed to run using this passage.

It meant that a darkness has engulfed the nine worlds just like the rule of the Ancient Ming back then.

He returned to the small courtyard at Peal City. The old man was now enjoying his time in a chair and basked in the sun. He looked quite lazy and comfortable.

It was as if he was enjoying the twilight of his life, the remaining few moments of his life. Li Qiye sighed emotionally after seeing this. He wondered if he could enjoy the same treatment one day during his old age.

He didn't disturb the old man and left silently. Before leaving, he couldn't help but look at the two pine trees again before leaving Pearl City completely.

There were more than ten thousand small islands in the Pearl Archipelago. Most were inhabited by people but some were deserted. He was sitting in the southern edge of an uninhabited one.

He watched the waves assault the shoal rocks with a forlorn gaze.

After a long time, he said flatly: “Come out, you have been

following me for a long time now since Pearl City.”

Once his words fell, a charming figure appeared nearby. It was the Pearl City Lord, Peacock Bright Monarch!

She wasn't surprised at all and bowed elegantly yet not subserviently towards him: “I'm very curious about you so I couldn't help following. Please forgive me.”

This was an authoritative figure in the entire Grand Sea so such words coming from her were very sensible.

“If I took offense, you wouldn't be alive right now.” Li Qiye glanced at her and chuckled before shifting his gaze back at the ocean.

The monarch shuddered after hearing this. This seemingly ordinary man was anything but that. She couldn't see through him at all, completely unable to gauge his strength.

“I'm curious about one thing too.” He said: “As the Pearl City Lord, are you on Lu Zhangsun's side or Gu Zun's? Of course, I know Zhangsun is no longer alive.”

This actually surprised her. She couldn't help but stare at him with a flash in her eyes.

“Of course, I know you're not Zhangsun's descendant or disciple or you wouldn't be cultivating another supreme art from Heaven Suppression.” He revealed while still staring at the ocean.

This made her even more cautious with her stare becoming more intense. She said slowly: “May I ask why you are here? Is it because of my Pearl City or Heaven Suppression?”

“Both.” Li Qiye chuckled and leisurely replied: “If necessary, I'll take back the two cities.”

“Who are you!” She became quite alarmed and lowered her tone: “Who sent you here?! The Soaring Immortal Sect?”

Li Qiye shook his head in response: “The Soaring Immortal Sect

is nothing. They aren't qualified to order me. No one in this world can!"

The vigilant monarch was stunned. Who would dare to utter such words in Mortal Emperor? It might bring about a sect-destroying calamity if the Soaring Immortal Sect were to catch wind of this statement.

No, one person indeed dared to say something like this. However, she has only heard of his name.

Li Qiye continued: "We'll talk about Gu Zun now. As the Pearl City Lord, have you actually seen him?"

The monarch calmed down and hesitated in responding.

"It looks like you're not quite sure either." Li Qiye smiled: "Tell me, what does Gu Zun look like right now? An old man or still a very handsome youth? Or a deity shrouded in a divine aura and visual phenomena?!"

She chose to shield her thoughts: "Young Noble, this is our business. I can't answer."

She became quite curious about his origin and intention. But as he has said, he came for both Pearl City and Heaven Suppression. Nevertheless, she didn't know whether he was a friend or a foe!

"Okay then, tell me about your Heaven Suppression Goddess. Where is she now? Inside Heaven Suppression or did Gu Zun escort her to a secret location now?"

# Chapter 1572: Mysterious Island

---

With a changed expression, she glared at him and said slowly: “I won’t talk to an outsider about Heaven Suppression.”

Li Qiye stopped and smiled at the ocean. It seemed that something there was attracting his unblinking gaze.

The monarch followed his stare as well and found something amiss. There was a halo appearing in the horizon like a rising sun.

However, it wasn’t the sun because the real thing was hanging high in the sky. Moreover, this halo was very faint and not dazzling and intense like the sun at all.

This faint light rose and darkened as it got higher. In the end, after reaching a certain height, it disappeared without a trace.

A dark shadow emerged instead from the horizon and was coming towards them. From the distant, it looked like an island soaring through the waves. It seemed quite slow but this was far from the truth. It was crossing through space at an unbelievable rate.

It didn’t take long before it appeared before the two, not far from Li Qiye’s position.

The monarch finally got a good look at this island. It was shrouded in fog so no one could actually see the real thing. Even if one could peer through this obscurity, they could only faintly see a mountain within.

She was an incredible master so she could sense something special. With her heavenly gaze, she found that it wasn’t actually fog shrouding it.

Space was the thing blocking all view because the island wasn’t located within the common space. Even though it was right before them, it was separated by several different realms. This gap made it look like it was shrouded in fog.

Though she could tell the spatial disparity, she couldn't see how far away it actually was.

"It's a different space." She understood that in order to board the island, they must cross through many different realms. It wasn't easy at all.

She also realized that the halo earlier was the island was crossing from an ancient time and space to appear before them.

"Your perception is indicative of your great strength." Li Qiye chuckled and praised.

"Buzz." A portal with rippling radiance opened just like the waves.

He smiled and entered without any hesitation. When his foot set on the portal, his laws entered as well, allowing him to disappear. It looked like he threw himself into the fog in order to board the island.

The monarch didn't dare to miss this opportunity and followed but she couldn't enter at all. The portal repelled her completely.

She didn't give up and shouted to channel her power. She created a grand dao just like a peacock spreading its tail. The power of this grand dao came crushing towards the portal since she wanted to force her way in.

"Boom!" The end result was the same. She still went flying despite her considerable power. Her internal energy churned and she saw stars in her eyes.

She tried several times again but the outcome was still the same. The portal repelled her while she was completely helpless against its power.

She finally gave up and knew that there was no way she could get in. Thus, she stood there waiting. There was no way for her to know that this was a portal of the Immortal Emperor level so her strength was insufficient.

This mysterious island piqued her curiosity. Just what was on this island that has crossed through time and space? Why was it here?

Of course, she understood that it had something to do with that ordinary looking fella. Perhaps he was the one who called for it.

After entering the island, Li Qiye climbed to another exceedingly high platform as if it could connect with the heaven above. One could pluck the stars while standing up there.

This was an altar with boundless runes carved on it from Immortal Emperors! It has experienced blessing and empowerments from these beings.

It seemed there was nothing else here outside of the imperial runes. No, there was a bronze loop fastened to a lid. There was nothing decorating this lid; it was just a bronze cover that has never been carved before.

He was instantly attracted to the loop on the lid as if it was the prettiest woman in the world. He simply couldn't look away.

He eventually commented with a tinge of emotion: "The ultimate weapon. I don't want that day to come but I need a weapon capable of threatening everyone into backing off! Even the damned heaven would have to falter! I hope the day when I need to use it will never come or the nine worlds will turn into ashes. History will no longer exist."

Having said that, he took a deep breath.

"Boom!" His sea of memories emerged. Invincible auras gushed out and assaulted everything. Luckily, this was a separated spatial location or the entire Mortal Emperor World would be trembling right now.

One Immortal Emperor after another came out. Of course, they were only shadows encompassing the emperor's' will, battle intent, supreme grand dao, and imperial laws! Each of them was

extremely mighty and could contend against the emperors' dao avatars.

Immortal Emperor Xue Xi, Immortal Emperor Min Ren, Immortal Emperor Tun Ri, Empress Hong Tian, Immortal Emperor Qian Li... All of these emperors came out of his mind.

They each occupied a particular position to create a supreme formation.

Even Legendary Godkings would be quivering in fear before this ultimate formation created by so many shadows of emperors. This thing could suppress everything in the world!

He grabbed the loop with both hands and said solemnly: "Let us begin and hope for an end in this generation regardless of the outcome. We won't escape from fate! This is our choice!"

"Boom!" All the emperors erupted with a massive aura. This power ravaged these temporal-spatial realms!

Finally, they channeled the altar with their unstoppable laws. All the runes there began to shine.

"Clank!" Li Qiye pulled the bronze loop and the thing sealed inside the altar was being pulled up slowly.

"Bang!" He finally took the item out.

It looked like a lantern post with a cover on both the top and bottom. The purpose seemed to be sealing the crystal column in the middle.

The column wasn't transparent and resembled a white stone carving. However, it also seemed natural enough to be the original form without any alteration.

Nevertheless, this opaque property didn't stop others from seeing a faint flame within. It was weak enough to be extinguished by the most gentle of breeze.

Li Qiye stared at the swaying and ordinary flame within with a

grin. This was no ordinary flame; the thing inside could destroy everything in the world!

# Chapter 1573: Identity Verification

---

Inside the crystal pillar was a flickering light. It was extremely horrifying but Li Qiye was unaffected. He had already experienced the most terrible of ordeals and spent painstaking effort while sacrificing many items to obtain this item.

Anyone else wouldn't have the same calmness right now. He held the bronze loop to lift the pillar before looking sentimentally at the emperors.

A while later, the shadows of the emperors disappeared and returned to his mind.

Meanwhile, the Peacock Bright Monarch quietly waited outside for him to come out. She wanted to know what he got and where the island came from. After all, she didn't want something beyond her control within her own territory.

Li Qiye finally came out and she walked forward to ask: "What was inside?"

"This thing." Li Qiye slowly raised the pillar. She immediately froze the moment she looked at it.

Her soul almost instantaneously left her body. This wasn't some type of immobilization art; it was an absolute suppression! Her cultivation, body, will, and even dao heart were instantly repressed.

She couldn't resist this ultimate suppression at all and felt that she was only an ant, can't reach the apex.

Even the tiniest sliver of resistance disappeared. This was the most terrible thing about it.

An Immortal Emperor could suppress anyone. However, the victim could still have the will to resist. This was simply not the case before this particular pillar.

It wasn't due to her weakness but the flickering light inside was too much. Just a single glimpse left her helpless.

She understood the implication; her fate was now in Li Qiye's hand. She was a fish on the chopping board, completely up to his whim.

"Curiosity kills the cat. This does save me some effort so I don't have to pry it from your mouth." Li Qiye chuckled at the monarch while holding the pillar.

"What, what are you going to do?" She was terrified but couldn't move or resist at all.

"I want to see if you are the real Pearl City Lord." He smiled.

"I am, if you don't believe me, you can go to the city for verification." She hurriedly responded.

"No need." To which he shook his head: "Plus, the Pearl City Lord isn't appointed by Heaven Suppression anyway."

With that, he unbuttoned her shirt, just the top two knots. With that, a scene of spring became exposed. Her snow-white skin below her neck was in plain sight in all its tender goodness.

Out came her rounded and plump cleavage. Hands would sink deep into their snow as white texture and eyes would brighten as a result.

Such beauty tugged at the heartstrings. Men would feel their blood boiling and heart palpitating.

"What are you doing?!" She was scared out of her mind and turned pale despite being a Godking.

Keep in mind that she was still an innocent woman yet to be seen by a man hence her shock at Li Qiye's action.

More importantly, if Li Qiye had any idea about her, she was powerless to stop him. Of course, his eyes weren't fixated on her breasts but rather the pendant on top of them.

It had an oval crystal with a glimmer flowing inside. The light was as magnificent as fireworks and continued to change shapes. The string was made from a thin law, virtually undetectable.

“The key to the Pearl Tower is indeed in your possession.” He smiled and said.

She heaved a sigh of relief and no longer misunderstood his intention: “I’m the city lord so of course, I have the key.”

“No, even if you have the key, it doesn’t mean that you are the city lord since you could seize it. However, it’s not hard to verify it.”

He placed his rugged hand on the pendant and her bare breasts. This triggered both embarrassment and anger but she could do naught.

“Buzz.” The faint light in the pendant seemed to be entering her breasts without leaving any wound. He seemed to have taken control of her body at this crucial moment.

Her mind opened. Keep in mind that no cultivator would ever allow for this key spot to be exposed but it was no longer up to her. A little pagoda floated out from her forehead, only the size of a finger. It emitted a blinding light with a holy power as if it could wash away all the darkness in this world.

“Looks like your identity is real.” Li Qiye nodded and said flatly: “The city lord’s position can be bestowed and the key could be forcefully taken. Not the Pearl Tower though, one would need its permission.”

He pulled back and tidied her dress again: “You might not be under Zhangsun’s branch but since the tower accepted you, he passed the key to you.”

“How do you know all of this?!” This was the biggest secret of Heaven Suppression. Even those who knew that the tower could pick its master would have no way of verifying it. However, Li

Qiye's familiarity on this point astounded her.

Of course, how could she know that he was the one who created the Pearl Tower? If he didn't know the method, no one else would either.

"What is there that I, Li Qiye, do not know?" He put away his pillar and clapped: "Okay, you're free now."

She shuddered for a bit before regaining control over her body again with the disappearance of the suppression. She became dazed as if looking at a ghost while retreating backward to keep a distance from Li Qiye.

"You're hurting my feelings." Li Qiye laughed and shook his head after seeing her scared expression: "Am I really that scary? I'm not a devil with horns or anything, just a nice and compassionate person."

The monarch thought otherwise. Anyone else would have escaped right away after regaining freedom but her choosing to linger around was already courageous enough.

Her face reddened after recalling how he unbuttoned and saw her bare breasts but there was nothing she could do.

She eventually calmed her raging emotions from past experiences of being an authoritative figure with a deep breath. His words echoed through her mind again and prompted her to blurt: "You, you are Li Qiye, Young Noble Li?!"

"Correct." He said with a faint smile.

She didn't expect this ordinary man to be the notorious Li Qiye. She has heard of his tales in the past and didn't think she would bump into him today. Being imprisoned by Fiercest wasn't shameful at all. After all, this was a godslaying existence; a man who dared to kill members from the Soaring Immortal Sect. Was there anything he couldn't do?

# Chapter 1574: Three Branches Of Heaven

## Suppression

---

The monarch took a deep breath and deeply bowed: “Young Noble Li, your fame is resounding like the thunder. To be able to see you is a great honor. Please excuse my lack of manners earlier.”

Li Qiye nodded: “I was rude first so it’s not your fault. I was only suspicious because you are not from Zhangsun’s branch yet are still acting as the Pearl City Lord.”

Though Li Qiye didn’t have any impure thoughts, she still felt her face becoming hot again when the topic was brought up.

She let go of this matter and said: “Our sect master told me that you are worthy of trust. Are you here to help us this time?”

The sect master she was referring to was Zi Cuining.

“Well, since I’m here already, might as well finish the good deed.” He calmly smiled.

The monarch became relieved after hearing this. Recently, Gu Zun’s branch had all the authority while she couldn’t communicate with Zi Cuining. This made her feel isolated.

Perhaps Li Qiye wouldn’t deal with Gu Zun himself but surely, he would act against the Soaring Immortal Sect. Their appearance has made her city feel quite pressured.

Though people said that it was an alliance between Heaven Suppression and Soaring Immortal, to be more precise, it was between that sect and Gu Zun’s own branch.

Recently, Zi Cuining told her that if anything were to happen to Heaven Suppression City, she must guard Pearl. That would be their last stronghold.

Zi Cuining also said that in a hopeless situation with desperate needs for allies, others wouldn’t be trustworthy. Only Li Qiye from

Cleansing Incense was reliable.

She didn't understand back then why her sect master trusted Li Qiye so much but after this experience, she gained a better understanding of the situation.

It wasn't easy for the monarch in the present. Heaven Suppression was pressuring her on top of Soaring Immortal. Meanwhile, she was the only one who could be counted on in Pearl City. Li Qiye's appearance finally gave her a sliver of hope.

"It's really surprising. Pearl Tower didn't pick Zhangsun's disciple to be the new successor but an outsider instead. It looks like you must be exceptional in some ways." He looked at her and said.

In the past, he created the Pearl Tower as a last resort in order to deal with Gu Zun taking over one day. If the Black Dragon King's descendants were incapable of fighting back, the tower would be of assistance.

Among the disciples back then, Li Qiye trusted Lu Zhangsun. Because of this, this person was in charge of the Pearl Tower.

Li Qiye assumed that his descendants would be the new successors. This was why he found this matter to be surprising.

With a slight hesitation, the monarch eventually spoke: "I didn't come from the Sacred Ancestor's branch. He took me in as a grand-disciple later."

The Sacred Ancestor in her words was Lu Zhangsun. He was the eldest disciple of the Black Dragon King. He earned the king's trust and even the Dark Crow once gave this assessment: "Magnanimous and insightful; his only defect is having an overabundance of kindness."

Nevertheless, the Dark Crow still left Heaven Suppression City to Zhangsun.

Zhangsun really didn't disappoint Li Qiye. Even when the Black

Dragon King was no longer in this world, the city continued to grow.

Unfortunately, he had two fatal mistakes. First, he didn't live as long as Gu Zun. This guy continued to grow younger while the opposite happened to Zhangsun. Secondly, he was too nice and didn't banish Gu Zun from the city or kill him. He cared too much about his master's feelings and this gave Gu Zun a chance to mature!

"You might not be from his branch but the tower still accepted you. This was why Zhangsun didn't adhere to the rigid tradition and still made you city lord instead of his disciple. He's a visionary indeed." Li Qiye praised.

The monarch nodded in agreement: "Yes, that's what happened. I didn't come from any of the three branches from Heaven Suppression but only a minor sect under its jurisdiction. I eventually joined at a young age and was taught many skills from the city by a regional master. The tower eventually accepted me so the Sacred Ancestor broke the tradition and took me in as a grand-disciple."

Pearl City was very special in this sect. Its city lord didn't need to listen to orders from Heaven Suppression.

Heaven Suppression was divided into three main branches: Lu Zhangsun, Gu Zun, and the Black Dragon Legion. The Little Sea Village was closely related to the Black Dragon Legion but it had a pivotal role for the sect as well.

In the past, Zhangsun's branch had control over Heaven Suppression. Gu Zun, on the other hand, was in a state of reclusion. Though he had his own disciples, they weren't eligible to take up any important role because of their relationship to Gu Zun.

As for the Black Dragon Legion, even if it rarely interfered with the sect's matters, it would often help with important matters to

great effect.

Unfortunately, the legion went on an expedition with the king. After this battle, it only existed in name. The ones left behind were weak so its influence dropped to a minimal level.

Another long period eventually passed with Zhangsun still in charge. In fact, it couldn't happen any other way. Zhangsun was the eldest disciple and part of the orthodox branch. It was natural that he would be in charge. Of course, it helped that the city thrived under his rule as well.

Nevertheless, Gu Zun never gave up since he believed that the city was rightfully his! Thus, he continued to gather power in the dark.

At the same time, the kind and considerate Zhangsun didn't do anything out of love for his master. This allowed for Gu Zun to have a chance to slowly rise within the sect. Once Zhangsun died, Gu Zun has gained great influence. Because of this, the sect became divided between Gu Zun's branch and Zhangsun's branch.

As for the Peacock Bright Monarch, because of her great talents and intelligence, her humble origin didn't stop the elders from valuing her.

She even carried out expeditions several times and contributed greatly during her youth. Her future should have been bright but it was a shame that she wasn't from any of the three branches. Therefore, her limit would most likely have been an elder of the sect. After all, it wasn't easy for an outsider to reach the upper echelon.

Who would have thought that when she visited Pearl City during a trip, the Pearl Tower unexpectedly chose her? This news came as a surprise to Lu Zhangsun as well. This allowed for her to rise to prominence as the new city lord.

This position was much higher than the elder level. She had

some decision-making power on top of being independent from Heaven Suppression. It was similar to the rank of an ancestor.

“How is Zi Cuining now?” Li Qiye asked.

“I haven’t received any news about her, but she’s fine for now inside Heaven Suppression. I’m certain she has her own plans.” The monarch pondered before answering.

Li Qiye nodded and smiled: “You people are really strange, allowing Gu Zun to take power like this. Forget it, you’re all still too inexperienced to contend against him.”

She took her time responding: “Well, the truth is that Ancestor Gu Zun has never shown his face. The one in charge right now is Ancestor Ye.”

“Ye Jiuzhou, right?” Li Qiye asked for confirmation.

“Yes.” The monarch looked around before telling the truth: “We’re not really sure if this is Ancestor Gu Zun’s will either since Ancestor Ye had always been in charge.”

“Of course you don’t know. Ye Jiuzhou had followed Gu Zun since youth so he is absolutely loyal to Gu Zun. Even if Gu Zun tells him to go die, he would do so without hesitation. Everything he’s doing now is Gu Zun’s order. He exists for Gu Zun.” Li Qiye stated flatly.

Jiuzhou was Gu Zun’s top disciple and had followed him for a long time. He also had a very prestigious position in Heaven Suppression.

# Chapter 1575: Internal Strife At Heaven Suppression

---

The Peacock Bright Monarch had trouble finding the right words. The only thing she knew about Gu Zun was his name. Few had seen Gu Zun before in Heaven Suppression since Ye Jiuzhou was the public figure.

“What about the others right now?” Li Qiye smiled. Others might not understand Gu Zun but he knew exactly what type of person Gu Zun was and knew what the guy was up to.

“In the Black Dragon Hall.” The monarch answered.

“A bunch of fools shutting themselves in.” Li Qiye shook his head.

“Young Noble, how do you know about it?!” This came as a surprise to her.

“It’s obvious. Gu Zun won’t kill the others before having full control over the situation. After all, Zhangsun’s is an orthodox branch then there’s the Black Dragon Legion and the Little Sea Village too. They have authority to preside over the situation. If Gu Zun were to kill all of them at once, he would only gain infamy. At the very least, he wants to overthrow the Black Dragon King’s status at Heaven Suppression. If the legion is no longer of concern, he wants to take his time taking over Zhangsun’s branch. It would be best if this branch and the village were to fight each other. Right now, it is only a test for him. He wants to see if Heaven Suppression still has some unused methods left.” Li Qiye chuckled.

Gu Zun wasn’t actually scouting Heaven Suppression. He was testing the Black Dragon King and the Dark Crow, to see if these two beings were still alive!

“Right.” The monarch didn’t think Li Qiye could analyze the situation so thoroughly: “A while ago, the Sacred Ancestor’s

branch and Ancestor Gu Zun's branch were equal in power. However, several ancestors from Ancestor Gu Zun's branch had committed misdeeds by violating the sect's rules so they were demoted. The other side led by Ancestor Shan thought the time was ripe for a counterattack in order to seize power. In just one night, they exiled many ancestors and took over against the wish of the sect master. She didn't want to rush things, unlike the other ancestors who wanted to push their advantage. During this difficult moments, some ancestors and experts asked the little village for help. They said that Ancestor Shan was eliminating dissenters and wanted the elders from the village to come and investigate." She sighed at this point.

The village didn't have any real power at Heaven Suppression but it did play a supervisory role. In a certain sense, legitimizing an action or promotion required the consent from the village.

"The village thought that they could use this opportunity to capture Gu Zun on top of removing his forces at Heaven Suppression." Li Qiye amusingly shook his head: "That's exactly what Gu Zun wants. Akin to jumping head first into a trap, simply courting death!"

"Yes." The monarch agreed: "After worshiping the ancestors, they started a meeting in the Black Dragon Hall in order to keep quiet. However, the hall is still closed right now. No one knows what's going on. The disciples are restless so they asked for Ancestor Ye to take over."

This hall was an important location in Heaven Suppression. Once fortified, there was no way to break in; news wouldn't come out either. Because of this, many important decisions were made in this place.

"Well done, one stone, many birds." Li Qiye said: "Just like Gu Zun's wish to capture them all at once. But yea, they won't die in there for now."

“Sect master believed so as well. Maybe they can’t open it from the inside either but it’s good that she didn’t go in herself. However, since Ancestor Shan’s group is trapped inside, many banished ancestors have come back now since the city is under Ancestor Ye’s rule.”

She understood that this was a coup of sorts. In fact, before the meeting, she and Zi Cuining warned Ancestor Shan who was Zhangsun’s oldest disciple.

Shan’s group assumed that this was the best chance to capture Gu Zun’s group and expel the others as long as they had the consent of the village.

They didn’t expect that this would end with them being trapped in the hall. This allowed Jiuzhou to have a chance of taking over Heaven Suppression.

Zi Cuining had no opportunity to counterattack since she had no forces with her. The only place that would heed her call was Pearl City. However, this was the last option so it wouldn’t move unless there was no other choice.

“Gu Zun’s talents are peerless. He can be considered one of the ten eonic geniuses and has figured out the way to control and lock the Black Dragon Hall. People won’t be able to come out.” Li Qiye understood Gu Zun’s plan.

The monarch was at a loss. Though the sect master was still around, Jiuzhou was in control so they couldn’t do anything.

“Have you ever met Gu Zun?” Li Qiye asked while the monarch was silent.

“I’ve seen him.” She answered: “A very long time ago though. Ancestor Gu Zun participated in a meeting started by Ancestor Shan. That was my first time participating as well. I heard many ancestors said that he was sick due to a problem with his cultivation so he has always been resting at home.”

“Sick?” Li Qiye laughed after hearing this: “Do you know what Gu Zun’s grand dao is? To put it bluntly, even if he turns into an idiot overnight, he could still easily cultivate with his grand dao. As if something could happen to his cultivation. No one in your sect can match his talents and the same goes for the entire nine worlds with a few exceptions.”

She had no response since she didn’t know much about the famous Gu Zun.

It was just a rumor at her sect that he has been recuperating. Ordinary disciples haven’t seen him before while his own branch was under Ye Jiuzhou’s order.

She smiled wryly and said: “I don’t know much about it since I’ve only seen him from far away. Outside of Ancestor Shan’s group, only the sect master has talked to Ancestor Gu Zun. She’s quite suspicious of him.”

Li Qiye chuckled: “Doubtful about his identity. Zi Cuining is smart, she knows who she is facing.”

The monarch quietly nodded: “Yes, she didn’t go into details and only said that the ancestor was very strange and suspicious.”

“Not surprising for Gu Zun. He has been waiting long enough for a chance to rise again. He knows that it will be either death or success. This is his last chance.” Li Qiye calmly said.

Though the Black Dragon King had pleaded for Gu Zun, the Dark Crow declared that this was the last exception. If Gu Zun refused to repent in the future, there shall be no more mercy.

The king himself promised that if Gu Zun didn’t change, he would kill the guy himself without needing an order from Li Qiye.

So all along, Gu Zun has been waiting for just one chance. If successful, he would reach the top of the nine worlds and could call for winds and rains!

Thus, he was cautious and wouldn’t do anything himself. Ye

Jiuzhou, on the other hand, was his sword and potential scapegoat!

Li Qiye noticed that the monarch was hesitant about speaking and smiled: “Go ahead.”

She eventually asked: “Young noble, are you a disciple of our sect?”

She knew that he was from Cleansing Incense but the guy was aware of too many secrets from Heaven Suppression. Moreover, only ancestors were privy to these secrets. She didn’t even know a few of them.

Of course, she believed that her master wouldn’t share these secrets with an outsider so she speculated that Li Qiye was a disciple secretly trained by the sect, a very high ranking one, just like the Black Dragon Legion’s members.

“You can think of it like that.” Li Qiye didn’t respond directly to her question.

She didn’t pry any further and finally noticed that the island parked before them has disappeared.

“Young noble, what was that place?” She became curious and afraid at the same time. There was no doubt that he got the crystal pillar from that mysterious island.

## Chapter 1576: Yu Zhan

---

Li Qiye smiled mysteriously: “That island? An immortal lives there so when I accidentally got there, he gave me the amazing lamp with a light capable of suppressing anyone.”

“You’re joking, how can there be an immortal in this world?” The exceptional monarch naturally didn’t believe him. After all, there were no immortals in the world.

Anyone else could be tricked by him and begin to spread false information about immortals.

He smiled again: “The world is unpredictable, who can be so sure? Maybe there are immortals but they don’t want to be seen by ordinary people. Otherwise, what thing can instantly suppress you in this world?”

She smiled wryly and knew that he didn’t wish to divulge the information. The same dreadfulness still existed in her mind while thinking about the pillar earlier. It didn’t matter how strong she was. It could still instantly freeze her as if she was powerless.

Fortunately, he didn’t do anything. This made her quite surprised because anyone else wouldn’t miss such a good chance.

“Are you staying at Pearl for now?” She hurriedly changed the topic.

He replied: “Sure, I’m thinking about going to Heaven Suppression to see Gu Zun later anyway.”

A grin showed on his face after saying this. He was interested in seeing what Gu Zun could do after planning for so long. Would it be a heaven-shattering scheme?

As the two were about to return, a rumbling noise resounded with a ship cruising through the waves with lightning speed.

It was a decent treasure with a large banner engraved with the

word “Yu”. It was sizable and embroidered with golden strings. It was glittering and overly dazzling under the sunlight. One could see it from the far distance.

“People from the Yu Clan.” The monarch was surprised to see the banner on the ship.

Li Qiye chuckled and responded: “Yu Clan from Discover City.” He remembered a few things at this point.

An aggressive youth stood on the bow of the ship with many powerful men standing behind the deck.

The youth looked around seventeen years of age with an imposing aura. He looked quite proud of himself and stared around with disdain.

“Hey, did you see anything glowing around here?” He shouted at Li Qiye once the ship got closer.

Li Qiye only smiled, too lazy to respond.

“Brat, I’m talking to you! You listening?!” The youth was used to this attitude in the Grand Sea so he shouted at Li Qiye again.

The monarch answered instead: “There was nothing glowing here.”

His expression turned for the better after seeing a beauty like the monarch. Nevertheless, he was still as arrogant as before because, in his eyes, everyone needed to show his clan some face, even Heaven Suppression.

“I heard a treasure has been unearthed here. This place is mine, so any treasure here belongs to me.” He said proudly.

Li Qiye wanted to laugh and said: “This is the Pearl Archipelago, not your Discover City. Better start playing nice for your own sake.”

It can be said that Li Qiye rarely acted in such a friendly manner but this youth didn’t understand. He became unhappy and said

harshly: “So what if it’s the Pearl Archipelago, this young master is here to find some treasures, who dares to say no?!”

He came out to find a treasure to celebrate the old ancestor coming into being. As he was going through the archipelago, he heard people saying that there was a sudden light flashing in this region so he went for a look.

Li Qiye glanced at him and said: ‘While I’m in a good mood, scram or I’ll wring your neck.’”

The boy’s expression turned ugly after hearing this. He might not know Li Qiye but the monarch did. Others might be wary of their Yu Clan in this region but Fiercest didn’t give a damn about anyone. He would kill whoever he wanted.

“Young Noble Yu, go back. There’s no treasure here.” The monarch kindly said. She didn’t want further complication. If the Young Noble from the Yu Clan were to die here, it would cause some trouble for Pearl as well.

However, her presence only embarrassed him even more. He should have been even cooler in front of this beauty and showed off his clan’s prestige. But now, after being yelled at by Li Qiye, he couldn’t back down at all. It would make him look bad in front of her. This was detrimental to his clan’s prestige as well.

“Brat, stop shamelessly boasting. Do you know who I am?!” In order to show off before the beauty, he arrogantly shouted at Li Qiye again.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Only a fool. You are throwing away your clan’s reputation.”

The boy didn’t take kindly to this lambaste. His face turned red while shaking with anger. He was young and hot-blooded, unable to bear such humiliation.

“Break his legs for me, let him know the fate of daring to insult me!” He told a man standing next to him.

“Brat, you’re too foolish to humiliate our young master.” The man immediately jumped from the ship and lunged towards Li Qiye like a tiger.

The monarch shook her head after seeing this. She knew that these fools were about to die yet didn’t wish to say anything. Fiercest was too notorious. Anyone who tried to stop him from killing might be killed as well!

“Brat, kneel!” The other burly men wanted to catch him as well.

“Bang!” Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at them. He casually swept his hand and all of them spat out blood before falling into the ocean.

The boy named Yu Zhan was shocked to see his subordinates being dealt with so easily and realized that he has messed with a master.

“Who’s breaking whose legs now?” Li Qiye smirked and slowly walked towards the boy.

Yu Zhan was frightened and even took several steps back. However, he mustered some courage and took a deep breath to stand up straight: “Brat, you’re not bad, quite strong even! But don’t be so rampant in the Grand Sea, if my Yu Clan wants you to die, you won’t live past midnight!”

Li Qiye suddenly teleported before the boy and shook his head again: “Fool. Stop throwing away your clan’s reputation.”

Yu Zhan was startled and immediately retreated. Alas, it was too late. Li Qiye brought him down and stepped on him on the deck.

The immobilized boy’s face turned red with Li Qiye’s foot on his chest. He couldn’t resist at all. This foot was as heavy as countless mountains.

“An ant daring to act arrogant in front of me? Take a look at yourself, a fool like you is worthy of being part of the Yu? Such a descendant is an affront to your old ancestor’s prestige.”

“I’m from the Yu Clan! Brat, touch me if you want to die! It doesn’t matter how strong you or your backing are, my clan will have revenge. Even if your master is a Godking, my ancestral grandmother will crush them with one finger!” The boy became emboldened after hearing about his ancestor again and cried out.

In his eyes, his ancestral grandmother was an invincible existence under the nine heavens. No one could oppose her!

“Matriarch Yu is still alive?” The monarch became startled. She has heard of legends about this person before like many others in the Grand Sea despite not seeing the woman before.

“That’s right.” Yu Zhan became somewhat smug in response: “My ancestral grandmother is living for another generation. Her venerable will sweep through the world. Anyone who dares to touch the Yu Clan’s children? She’ll wipe their sect out!”

# Chapter 1577: Scared Stiff

---

Yu Zhan had a cavalier attitude while talking about his ancestor, his pride. In fact, he has never seen her before and only heard about her tales.

As he grew older, even the elders from Heaven Suppression, the so-called strongest sect in the Grand Sea, were very respectful when it came to his ancestral grandmother. They would tidy their clothes with great reverence before daring to talk about her.

Because of this, she was forever unbeatable in his mind. Anyone in this region would need to show his ancestor some respect. Thus, as long as he brought her up, no one would dare to provoke their clan.

This was indeed the truth. The Peacock Bright Monarch was startled to hear that the illustrious Matriarch Yu is living for another generation. An old Godking once said that if they had to pick two top supremes at the Grand Sea, it would be Gu Zun and Matriarch Yu!

According to her sources, Matriarch Yu's lifespan was over so she had to try for a death meditation. Everyone thought she would die during this meditation. Who would have thought that she managed to endure through it?

"Matriarch Yu." Li Qiye repeated. A current of emotions coursed weakly through his mind.

"That's my ancestral grandmother." Yu Zhan declared: "Yea, so touch me if you dare. My ancestral grandmother will come out and kill you no matter where you run off to."

The monarch wanted to plead for Yu Zhan. After all, she already had a hard time dealing with Gu Zun's branch. It would be even more unfavorable for Pearl City to provoke the Yu Clan as well.

But she knew that it would be useless if Yu Zhan continued to be

unwise like this. Fiercest had no qualm about killing anyone.

“Crack!” His pompous attitude was met with swift retribution and sounds of bone-breaking.

“Ah!” A pitiful scream echoed with blood staining the deck.

Li Qiye had stomped down and broke both of his legs. The pain made the boy cry out in anguish.

“You!” After recovering from the initial pain, Yu Zhan was still shocked. Normally, people would turn pale after hearing the name of his ancestral grandmother. He thought that this would be enough to scare Li Qiye so that the guy would release him. Alas, this ended with him having two broken legs.

“Crack! Crack! Crack!” Li Qiye didn’t only break his legs but even grind down on them. More bones were crushed.

“You...” The boy screamed again from the pain.

“Crack!” Now it was his wrist turn to be crushed.

“No...” Such shrill scream was too eerie. As the adage goes, the ten fingers are linked with the mind. One could easily imagine the pain the boy was experiencing. His face contorted with cold sweat dripping down.

“Little animal, I, I’ll kill you!” Yu Zhan endured the pain and cried out.

“Crack!” Li Qiye then crushed his other wrist, prompting Yu Zhan to convulse repeatedly. His clothes were soaked with sweat.

After a long time, the howling boy eventually calmed down from the pain. He was really scared this time and didn’t dare to aggressively holler again.

The monarch smiled wryly at this scene. The wicked will be cured by the same type. Others might not want to provoke the Yu Clan but this unlucky young master has met his match today in Fiercest.

Li Qiye stared at the guy who was about to faint from the pain and said flatly: “Still want to continue? No problem for me. Keep on acting insolent and rely on your clan and grandmother’s prestige. I have plenty of time so I’d like to hear more. Of course, each time you say something, I’ll break a different bone on your body. Don’t worry, I’m very skilled. Even if I dismantle your body one bone at a time, you’ll still be alive and well.”

Having said that, he looked up and down at the boy as if pondering which bone to break next.

Yu Zhan shuddered with considerable fear. He felt cold under Li Qiye’s stare as if he has fallen into an ice pit. This was the gaze of a devil.

“Kill me if you dare!” He stubbornly said but the tone of his voice betrayed him. He was no longer as arrogant and mighty as before.

“Kill you? You are but an ant beneath my foot. I can crush you easier than crushing an ant. You think I will care about an ant’s corpse stuck to my sole? I just need to wipe it off.” Li Qiye chuckled.

The boy nearly pissed his pants after hearing this.

“But, I won’t kill you.” Li Qiye said with an indifferent expression.

Yu Zhan finally heaved a sigh of relief. This was the feeling of having survived a disaster. He suddenly felt that it was good to be alive.

“I just want to let you and your clan know that in the future, when you see me, you better kneel and talk. It shall be your honor.” He stated calmly.

“You!” The scared boy didn’t dare to retort while stricken with fear under Li Qiye’s glare.

Li Qiye finally moved his foot and kicked him to the side: “Run back to your clan and tuck your tail between your legs. Otherwise,

I'll crush your dog head to a pulp." With that, he turned and left.

"You, remember this, I'll have my revenge..." The humiliated boy claimed, unable to endure this anger.

However, he quickly shut up after Li Qiye turned around and didn't dare to say anything else while slightly moving backward.

"Fool." Li Qiye shook his head and gave up on this incurable person.

Yu Zhan could only watch him leave and couldn't handle being scared another time.

The monarch had nothing to say either. This level of character couldn't get into Li Qiye's sight. He could kill a hundred Yu Zhan easily if he wanted to.

The two of them returned to Pearl City. She was staying in the most central location in Pearl. This was the mansion of the generational city lords but the most conspicuous place was the Pearl Tower, not this mansion.

It was actually in the center axis of the city and surrounded by the clouds as the tallest building here.

The style was quite simple, built from many green bricks. At the top of the tower was a huge ball made out of rocks with a dark color.

The name confused many spectators. Pearl Tower should be a treasure architecture with bright radiance. However, its appearance didn't match its name.

Moreover, even the oldest residents here didn't know of its origin. It seemed that it was already there in the very beginning of the city.

An old man even said that this tower might have been built even before the city. Who knows if this was true or not?

Li Qiye at the front took his time staring at the high tower. He

eventually told the monarch: “Have you climbed the tower?”

“Many times.” The monarch replied: “The Sacred Ancestor said there are great mysteries here.”

“But you have yet to grasp them.” He said with a faint smile.

# Chapter 1578: Messenger From Heaven

## Suppression

---

The monarch looked up at the tower too and eventually shook her head. “The mysteries of the tower are as boundless as the ocean. It feels like I’m just a single drop in the sea, completely insignificant and lost. Where do I even start?”

Li Qiye simply smiled. “Everything is hard in the beginning. It doesn’t matter how vast the sea or how profound the idea, there is always an origin. One step at a time to walk a thousand miles. Start from the bottom with the most sincere attitude towards the top. If it doesn’t work the first time, do it a second time. If you fail again, then go for the third. As long as you persevere, you will see results.”

“One step at a time to the top?” The monarch had heard that the top of the tower was the most precious location from the Sacred Ancestor.

“Yes, the power of the tower is at the top but without the support of the base, the top is only a simple ball.”

“How do you know all of this?” She wondered.

Li Qiye could easily reveal all of their secrets and Zi Cuining couldn’t have told him either. Despite being the sect master, she didn’t have authority over Pearl and its secrets.

“It would be stranger if there was something I didn’t know in this world. Try your best, it will be a lifetime of benefits if you can grasp the tower.” He replied.

“Thank you, Young Noble.” She bowed gently and stopped inquiring about his knowledge regarding her sect.

When the two arrived outside the entrance of the Peacock Mansion, an attendant hurriedly came out to report to the city lord. He carefully looked at Li Qiye standing by her side before

whispering to the monarch, “City Lord, the people from the sect are here!”

“Who?” Her eyes became serious just like her voice.

“Elder Sun,” the attendant replied. He paused and glanced at Li Qiye before continuing, “Someone from Ancestor Ye’s camp.”

“I’ll go see him,” the monarch replied.

“City Lord, should we prepare? After all, who knows what those people are up to.” The disciple made a cut-throat gesture. The people from Pearl were very wary of Jiuzhou’s group.

“Let’s go.” The monarch entered the Peacock Mansion with hastened steps.

Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t comment. He followed the monarch inside.

There was an old man waiting in a typical robe with a sharp gaze. His aura alone made his power apparent.

A skinny disciple stood beside him, acting as a tea server. Two rows of burly men in battle uniform were situated to the left and right of the hall. They were experts from Heaven Suppression and gave off an aggressive aura.

Since Elder Shun had brought so many experts along with him to Pearl Mansion, his intentions clearly weren’t friendly.

Elder Sun stood up and addressed the monarch, “Bright Monarch, long time no see.”

Despite being a veteran elder, he was still below the monarch in terms of status and role. As the Pearl City Lord, she was on the same level as ancestors in spite of her young age.

“Elder Sun, sorry to keep you waiting,” she greeted with a nod after sitting down.

Li Qiye casually sat down on another chair. His eyes swept through the experts.

They resembled drawn bows, ready to rush forward at the elder's command

Only the young disciple standing next to the elder was relatively timid. He occasionally peeked at Li Qiye and the monarch while holding the teacup.

Elder Sun found Li Qiye's action surprising. He thought that the guy was only the monarch's attendant but he didn't waste further thoughts on this.

He stood in the middle of the hall and cupped his fists. "Bright Monarch, I'm here to congratulate you under the sect master's instruction."

"For what?" The monarch was unmoved.

"Your rule at the Pearl Archipelago has benefited the people. The residents here have a peaceful life while all the tributary powers obey you without questions. The entire sect admires your meritorious service..." The elders sang songs of praise.

Anyone else would feel smug after hearing this and could picture themselves rising through the ranks to reach the top of the world.

However, the Bright Monarch's expression remained indifferent. "Only a trivial matter, not a cause for celebration," she replied in a flat tone.

"No, no, you are too humble, Bright Monarch." The elder hurriedly shook his head. "All the ancestors appreciate your grand contribution. The sect master feels that it is a waste of your talents to just govern this area so everyone wishes to promote you to a Chief Elder. You shall defend Heaven Suppression while aiding the sect master with management."

She might be an ancestor right now so this was a sizable promotion on top of being the sect master's right-hand man. This would make her stage even greater in the future and no longer limited to Pearl City. Her new playground would be all of Heaven

## Suppression and the Grand Sea.

“Is that so?” She had no joyous reaction to this promotion.

“Of course, this is the order of the sect.” Elder Sun took out a scroll and spread it in front of the monarch: “Here are the official signatures from the sect master and ancestors.”

She simply glanced at it before smiling and shaking her head. “Elder Sun, you should know that as the Pearl City Lord, I don’t need to accept this decree. I need to see a direct order from the sect master, not just this list of signatures. It is completely useless at Pearl.” Her smile was replaced with a stern demeanor.

This particular signed decree wasn’t on the same level as a direct order since the latter contained the supreme will of the sect master as well!

The elder coughed in response. “Bright Monarch, you should know that the circumstances are different right now. If you don’t believe me, you can personally go to Heaven Suppression and meet the sect master. You’ll listen to her, right?”

The monarch shook her head. “Elder, the sect’s rules must be upheld over personal relationships. First, only a direct order is effective at Pearl. Second, in order to command Pearl, the Black Dragon Legion, the Sacred Ancestor’s branch, and the Elder Association of the village must give their signature as well. Otherwise, no one can command Pearl.”

With that, she continued on while looking at the elder, “You surely know this as an elder? Without these two things, I won’t go to Heaven Suppression or mobilize a single troop from Pearl!”

Elder Sun rubbed his palms together. “Bright Monarch, it’s not like you don’t know the situation right now in the sect. Many ancestors are trapped in the Black Dragon Hall including the members of the Elder Association, so they can’t give you their signatures. Don’t worry, after opening it, they will add another

decree so your promotion will still be in effect. You deserve it from all your hard work.”

She responded with a kingdom-toppling smile.

This so-called promotion was only a diversion. Ye Jiuzhou’s group couldn’t control the archipelago right now since outsiders couldn’t take over Pearl City.

Meanwhile, the monarch’s status was proper. It’s not as if they could arbitrarily dismiss her even if Jiuzhou had full control of Heaven Suppression. Because of this, they used this promotion as an excuse for her to leave Pearl. Even if they couldn’t insert a new city lord, they could still use her absence as an opportunity to wrest control over the city.

Of course, such a promotion could be seen differently depending on the person. In order to have a higher status in Heaven Suppression, this was not a bad choice.

However, it was different for the monarch. During this existential crisis for Heaven Suppression, Pearl City will remain as Heaven Suppression’s last stand just like Zi Cuining has entrusted her.

# Chapter 1579: Threat

---

With her eyes peering at the elder, the monarch slowly said: “Elder Sun, it’s not like I can’t accept the promotion but I need to see sect master at Pearl first before considering.”

Ye Jiuzhou’s group wished to transfer the monarch but she didn’t let up. Due to the lack of communication, she was certain the Zi Cuining has been placed under house arrest. If Cuining could go to Pearl, it would be a chance for the monarch to rescue her then counterattack together.

“Bright Monarch, you’re making this hard for me. The sect master can’t come here right now since she’s too worried about Ancestor Shan and the others being trapped in the hall. She’s busy researching the mysteries of the hall and can’t leave. If you don’t mind, you can go to the sect and see her...”

The monarch interrupted him with a head shake: “Elder, I have already given my answer. Either the sect master comes here to see me in person or bring a signed, official decree!”

The elder quickly responded: “Bright Monarch, why bother adhering to an old law, you need to be more flexible since this matter is very beneficial for your future. Just come to the sect and your potential will be unlimited...”

“Elder, no need to waste more time. We’ll do this by the rules only.” She stopped him again.

“Monarch, this makes it quite difficult for me. If I go back empty-handed, how can I explain it to the sect master and ancestors?”

“Such a trivial matter, is there really a need to go about in circle like this? Both Gu Zun and Ye Jiuzhou are too prudent right now compared to back then. Gu Zun used to be quite domineering with no qualm for anything. If this was him in the past, he would directly attack Pearl City. Why bother resorting to tricks like this?

How disappointing.” Li Qiye laughed and shook his head.

He had been quietly sitting there so Elder Sun didn't pay attention to him. But now, he was boasting shamelessly right away to the visible annoyance of the elder.

“Brat, who are you!?!” The elder immediately shouted.

Li Qiye didn't bother looking at the elder before grinning leisurely: “Just a nosy outsider.”

“Bright Monarch, what is going on? This is a confidential matter of our sect, how can there be an outsider here to steal our secrets? You know that he isn't part of the sect yet you still brought him here? This is blatant favoritism and lawbreaking...”

“Okay, don't bother trying to assign some blame.” Li Qiye answered instead while waving his sleeve dismissively: “To sum it up, you just want to seize Pearl City. Sigh, Ye Jiuzhou is old and Gu Zun is too timid now. Fine, come back, tell the two of them to scram.”

“Junior, do not insult my ancestors!” Elder Sun shouted: “Men, capture him!”

The two rows of experts stood up and surrounded Li Qiye with a murderous aura. There was no intention of capturing him alive.

“Monarch, you need to give the sect an answer for this...” The elder spoke gravely.

They wanted nothing more than to escalate the situation in order to have justification for a military installation at Pearl.

“Rumble!” All the experts went flying in an instant with spurting blood. With a series of loud bangs, they all fell outside of the hall and couldn't get up at all.

Li Qiye didn't move an inch. No one could see how he attacked earlier.

“I shall give you an answer.” Li Qiye spread out his hand before

the elder could finish speaking. It resembled a monstrous mountain slamming down on the elder.

The old man was aghast and immediately roared to summon his treasure for a direct confrontation.

“Boom!” But the result was still the same as before. His treasure was impressive indeed but it failed to protect him. He was blown flying by one palm attack and spat out blood as well.

“Master!” The tea-serving disciple turned pale and quickly helped the elder up.

“Who the hell are you?!” As an elder from Heaven Suppression, he wasn’t just all talk. However, he couldn’t withstand a single palm strike today so it was apparently just how terrible his foe was. This was definitely the strength of a Godking; such a person couldn’t be nameless.

“Li Qiye. Maybe you have heard of my name.” Li Qiye chuckled in response.

“Fiercest!” Even someone as experienced as the elder faltered backward in horror.

He was truly startled. Fiercest was too famous right now and just his title alone could scare many people.

He annihilated the Space Trample Mountain and banished Soaring Immortal back then. This battle record shocked all of Mortal Emperor so everyone would feel dread when hearing his name.

At this moment, everyone knew who “Fiercest” was. On the other hand, “Li Qiye” stopped being used by others for a multitude of reasons.

Heaven Suppression was illustrious at the Grand Sea but the elder knew that Fiercest had wanton regards for anything. There was no chance he would be scared of their sect! Him being an elder wouldn’t make Li Qiye think twice about killing him.

“Good.” Li Qiye read his demeanor and chuckled: “It’s good that you know fear despite being from Heaven Suppression. I would have killed a naive fool otherwise.”

Elder Sun took another step back after hearing this.

The disciple helping him tried to be brave but still stammered: “Our, our Heaven Suppression isn’t, isn’t afraid of anyone.”

Elder Sun jumped from fear and quickly pulled the youth behind him. This was his youngest disciple. The kid has always been obedient so he was very satisfied and didn’t wish to see Fiercest kill him.

“What’s your name?” Li Qiye smirked while staring at the youth.

Elder Sun took another step back to shield his disciple and replied instead: “Li Qiye, our Heaven Suppression City has no grudges with you, why are you interfering with us?”

Li Qiye ignored the elder and looked at the youth behind him: “What is your name?”

“My, my name is Lin Qi.” The boy found enough courage to eventually respond with his head held high.

Li Qiye was amused by this boy and eventually waved his sleeve: “Scram, all of you. I don’t want to see any of you again. Go back and tell Gu Zun and Ye Jiuzhou that I, Li Qiye, have arrived!”

Elder Sun was an unpleasant sight to behold at this moment. He didn’t trouble the monarch any further. The wisest thing to do against Fiercest was to run away in order to stay alive. Otherwise, regardless of how powerful one might be and their backing, it would all be useless.

The elder immediately left with his disciples and the others with the greatest speed.

“Young noble, Ancestor Ye will have an excuse after this commotion.” The monarch smiled wryly.

“So what? They want to capture Pearl City regardless of whether there is a justification or not.” Li Qiye said flatly.

She sighed softly in response and understood this logic as well. The only thing she could do right now was to buy time.

“I wonder how the sect master is doing?” She worriedly said. The ancestors were actually safe being locked in the Black Dragon Hall. On the other hand, Zi Cuining’s life might be in the hands of Ye Jiuzhou.

“You’re worrying too much.” Li Qiye shook his head in response: “And you’re underestimating her as well. Jiuzhou is strong but Cuining has the Black Dragon Spear. If she really wants to leave, he can’t stop her anyway! She must have a reason for staying behind.”

“I hope so.” The monarch said feebly. She understood that that the sect master was an insightful person and wouldn’t have easily fallen into the hands of the enemy. Nevertheless, her perilous situation was still worrisome.

“Ignore these trivial matters. Come with me to Discover, I’ll let you meet someone.” Li Qiye said flatly.

# Chapter 1580: Discover City

---

“Discover City? To see whom?” The monarch was surprised to hear this.

“Someone who can help you and Heaven Suppression. A backer in the future.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“A person who can be our backer?” The monarch was astounded. She would have burst out laughing if someone else were to tell her this.

Who was number one at the Grand Sea? Clearly Heaven Suppression! They would still be a top ranking sect in all of Mortal Emperor. There were so many experts with invincible Godkings like Ye Jiuzhou. Moreover, a legendary existence like Gu Zun was unfathomable.

In this region, they were others’ backer, since when did they need someone else to be their backer?

Thus, it was understandable for the monarch to be surprised. However, Fiercest wouldn’t make a joke like this.

“Young noble, you are referring to Matriarch Yu?” She mused about the possibilities and only came up with one person.

Matriarch Yu was the only existence in this domain that could make Heaven Suppression wary. She was also the only one who was a match for Gu Zun.

“No. There is someone else outside of Matriarch Yu in Discover.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

“Excuse my ignorance then. I have never heard of such an amazing person.” She answered.

They needed to be Emperor Assailants in order to be Heaven Suppression’s backers.

“Just because you don’t know doesn’t mean they aren’t there.

There are many experts in this world or someone as powerful as Gu Zun wouldn't be tucking his tail for a generation." Li Qiye chuckled.

The monarch wasn't in a position to make a comment. After all, despite the internal strife, she wouldn't look down on her own ancestor.

"Young noble, Pearl is very important so if I leave, it would be very inappropriate. We'll be playing right into Ancestor Ye's hand. If you don't mind, I'll let the First Elder from Pearl go with you?" The monarch pondered before suggesting.

"If I don't mind? Do you need to ask me something like this? It is a great fortune to be favored by people standing at the peak. You think just any random guy could go along and be accepted? I'm taking you to him because you have been accepted by the Pearl Tower so you have the ability to be great at Heaven Suppression. Others aren't qualified for this chance." Li Qiye refused.

She didn't expect this response but after carefully thinking about it, it made sense. A person who could become the backer of Heaven Suppression should be incredibly powerful. Not just anyone could be granted an audience or be favored by them.

"As for Pearl, leave it. If Gu Zun's group wants to come, let them. You think the Pearl Tower is only there for looks? It's actually good if they come so we can capture all of them in front of the tower." He smiled and said.

"Okay then. We can also see Matriarch Yu during this trip to Discover. If she is willing to help, that might be able to turn the tide. Rumor has it that she is from the Black Dragon Legion." She said after careful consideration.

"More than just that." Li Qiye said flatly and couldn't help staring at the horizon.

"Go get ready then we'll go to Discover." He told the monarch.

After having made up her mind, the monarch stood up and suddenly realized something strange. Ever since Li Qiye got here, he became the one giving the order. Moreover, it seemed so natural as if this was how it should be and no one could resist him. She didn't understand the reasons why.

She walked a few steps before stopping and looked back to say: "Young Noble Li, why do you know Heaven Suppression like the palm of your hand?"

Li Qiye was privy to secrets unbeknown by ancestors. For example, after being accepted by the Pearl Tower, she had a little one in her mind. Too few people in Heaven Suppression were aware of this secret.

"You should ask your progenitor, the Black Dragon King." Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile.

The monarch suddenly felt a bit breathless after hearing this response. She turned and left the hall right after.

After taking care of matters in Pearl, she left with Li Qiye. However, she was very low-key this time and didn't let others know so she took the guise of being Li Qiye's servant.

Discover was an old city in the Grand Sea with a rich history. Few cities were older than it. One had to talk about the Yu Clan when they came to this place. It wasn't a great lineage at all in terms of territory.

Moreover, they didn't have that many members either unlike the imperial lineages. There might only be several hundred thousand disciples. The direct branch would only have several thousand. In terms of scale, this was a second-rate sect at best.

Nevertheless, the clan was immensely famous in the entire Grand Sea. Numerous talents appeared with countless experts.

Among the young generation, there were amazing geniuses like Yu Yulian. As for the prime generation, the clan master was quite

powerful. As for the upper realm, the Yu Ancestors were quite dominating.

It has been very lively at the clan. Countless powers came to visit with many big shots including Godkings. This was due to a recent incredible news. Matriarch Yu has made it to another generation.

After the big shots calmed down, they rushed to congratulate her.

Anyone would feel a sense of respect after hearing her name. Even the strongest would feel quite apprehensive. Ancestors from Heaven Suppression would call her senior as well.

According to some sources, she was the best general of the Black Dragon Legion and has never been defeated. She joined this legion during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation. She contributed greatly and was completely unstoppable.

However, her battle record didn't stop there. One story told that after the emperor ascended, she even fought against him. Alas, outsiders weren't qualified to watch.

Nevertheless, people said that after the end of the battle, one disciple asked the emperor how strong was Matriarch Yu? He simply said: "Capable of assailing an emperor."

The world uproared before this revelation. It had a completely different meaning when an emperor was the one to say this.

Although many people claimed to be Emperor Assailants in the nine worlds, these were only self-boast. Some Nine Worlds' Godkings would actually call themselves Emperor Assailants.

Some people took it to the next level. For example, a few older characters took this title after just lasting three to five moves against an emperor in order to propel their own status. They certainly didn't have this power.

This was not the case for Matriarch Yu. She personally challenged the emperor and never boasted about her own record.

The emperor himself praised her great achievements. There was no reason to doubt its validity.

Because of this, she was a well-known Emperor Assailant in the Grand Sea, one of the very few recognized by an emperor. This was her virtually matchless reputation.

Unfortunately, even Emperor Assailants couldn't withstand the passage of time. During Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's generation, her lifespan ran dry and she had to try a death meditation.

Everyone thought she would die with this last attempt but no one expected for the Yu Clan to announce that she has come out successfully.

Because of this, the world thought that she could really live for a second life. No one would even dare to dream about such a thing so if this was indeed the truth, it would be too shocking!

# Chapter 1581: Small Pub

---

After entering Discover, Li Qiye and the monarch felt its ancient aura. He couldn't help but take a deep breath.

It seemed to have been brewing for millions of years. Thus, a single breath brought along this boundless time period with an intangible sad melody.

"Discover City." He smacked his lips and commented: "Such an unforgettable feeling."

"Do you know about this one defining snack at Discover that people can't get tired of?" He looked at the monarch who had the disguise of a servant and said.

"Defining snack?" The monarch was caught off guard. The majority of cultivators weren't big eaters, especially at their level. There was no need to eat food and grains.

But now, when Li Qiye brought up this mortal event, of course, the monarch became surprised.

"Come, I'll take you, haha. You won't be able to find it yourself." Li Qiye smiled and continued on his way.

There were many inhabitants in this old city. It was very bustling and busy at this moment. Characters from all over the world visited to congratulate the Yu Clan. They didn't invite anyone to celebrate Yu Taijun's successful death meditation but big shots came anyway to see her.

Li Qiye seemed to ignore all of this and took the monarch from one street to another through the sea of people.

She has been to Discover before but Li Qiye was much more familiar with each street. After taking many twists and turns, the monarch felt a bit dizzy and couldn't tell the direction. She only knew that she was still in Discover.

They finally made it to a narrow and long alley devoid of light. It was very quiet with no one around. It looked like this was a slum with tattered buildings. Many of which had been abandoned. Only old and feeble men lived here.

They came to a tiny pub with a small entrance and a banner with the word “[Feng](#)”. The word was fading from its age and virtually illegible.

Even mortals didn't want to hang around this pub, let alone cultivators. Li Qiye slightly smiled after seeing the banner before entering the pub.

The monarch thought Li Qiye would take her to an old restaurant to eat something special, not such a run-down pub.

They found this place to be really small with only a few tables and some randomly placed stools.

The counter was positioned inconspicuously in the corner with a faint oil lamp. It was so weak that just a small breeze could blow it out. Because of it, this tiny pub had some semblance of light. Otherwise, it would have been even darker.

The old man was lying on the counter with a light green robe. It was quite simple without any ornaments. Who knows how long he has been wearing this robe? It was turning white from being washed too many times.

Nevertheless, this old robe was still very clean without a speck of dust. It looked like the old man was very diligent with his hygiene.

He had a very righteous appearance. Despite the wrinkles, his features were bold and strong as if he was carved from a powerful blade. He seemed to be sleeping peacefully; nothing in this world mattered to him.

The monarch had no comment regarding this pub. She thought that there would be a separate domain inside but this wasn't the case.

Li Qiye walked to the counter and gently tapped to say: “You have some guests.”

The old man woke up. He slowly opened his old eyes and stared carefully at Li Qiye. Alas, it seemed that his aged eyes couldn't see Li Qiye clearly regardless of how wide he opened them. Because of this, he had to rub his eyes.

“What, I have something on my face? Or am I even prettier than some beauties?” Li Qiye chuckled and said leisurely.

The old man was silent for a moment before speaking dispiritedly: “Sir, what do you need?”

“One jar of Shaoxing wine and a portion of anise beans.” Li Qiye ordered before looking for a stool to sit down.

“Alright.” The old man replied quietly and came to the back. A flurry of sound came about.

The monarch was still at a loss about Li Qiye's intention and had to take another look at the pub.

“Okay, no need to look around. Sit down.” Li Qiye patted the stool next to him and smiled at the woman.

She sat beside him without saying anything. A while later, the old man brought a plate of anise-flavored beans and a jar of wine to the table: “Take your time.”

He then went back to resting on the counter with his chin first to stare at the two, especially Li Qiye.

Li Qiye ignored his stare and poured a cup for both him and the monarch: “This is quite rare. Drink.”

He raised his cup and drank slowly.

The monarch assumed that this would be very delicious and followed suit.

“Ugh..” When the wine streamed down her throat, she immediately stopped and almost spat everything out. This might

be the worst and cheapest wine she has ever tasted in her life.

She garnered that only the poorest mortals would drink this type of wine not even worth a single bronze coin. There were no words to describe this awful taste, even worse than drinking horse urine.

The problem was that Li Qiye had no difficulty drinking it. He took his time as if this was the best wine in the world, that it could turn someone into an immortal.

She simply tried her best to swallow this terrible wine. Her scalp tingled and she put the cup down after one gulp.

Li Qiye relished the experience and eventually asked her: “You want to try some beans?”

She had no appetite after looking at them and shook her head.

Li Qiye just smiled and grabbed a handful. He peeled before throwing them into his mouth and chewed with crispy noise.

He took a sip then ate more beans as if they were delicacies.

The monarch had no words while watching. Are these the special food he was talking about? Maybe Fiercest had some strange urges compared to others.

The guy went on like a leisure immortal enjoying his meal. Meanwhile, the shopkeeper was still staring at Li Qiye as if something about the guy was attracting his attention. He didn't care about the monarch at all.

Li Qiye didn't care like before and continued eating and drinking.

Eventually, loud noises came from outside. Next, a group filed inside the small pub from the dark entrance.

This tiny pub was filled right away with more than ten newcomers. The group immediately surrounded the two.

The monarch took note of their clothing and became startled. This was the Yu Clan.

“Fourth Uncle, it’s this brat!” A youth pointed at Li Qiye.

Feng is a character in the city’s name, Discover. Feng alone here means wind/news/style

## Chapter 1582: Shopkeeper

---

The youth was Yu Zhan who got beaten badly at the archipelago by Li Qiye. He was much bolder this time and dared to stand before Li Qiye unlike being scared out of his mind at the end of their previous meeting.

Li Qiye put down the cup and coldly glared at the youth, prompting him to take several steps back before the middle-aged man.

It wasn't because he was a coward. The pain from the torture last time left him hopeless. Without some amazing medicines from his clan, he would have needed to stay in bed for another year.

Outside of the dozen of experts from the clan, the middle-aged man was his Fourth Uncle. He was muscular with eyes like lightning.

He was fourth in line but his cultivation as a powerful paragon was only weaker than the Yu Clan Master.

The Yu Clan couldn't swallow this anger from the beating so after their disciples spotted him at Discover, Yu Zhan immediately asked his uncle to get revenge.

"You're the one who beat down people from our clan?" Fourth Uncle stared at Li Qiye and asked slowly.

Li Qiye finally looked at him and said lazily: "So what?"

"Bam!" The man slammed on the table and caused the cups to jump while shouting: "Good, it's good that you're admitting this. How do you want to settle it then?"

"Why bother settling?" Li Qiye smiled and said.

To which the uncle responded: "Stop running your mouth. Our Yu Clan does not pick on the weak. I will give you two choices right now. Kneel and admit your wrongdoings or I'll return the favor by

breaking your legs!”

“And if I do not pick either choice?” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Bam!” He slammed on the table again: “Then you’re courting death!”

“Sir, please sit if you want to eat but go outside for a fight.” The old man quickly gathered the cups and plates on the table and told Fourth Uncle.

Fourth Uncle looked at him and casually threw out a gold ingot: “Old man, take it. Our clan will pay for breaking your items.”

The old man stared back without saying anything. Fourth Uncle thought that this wasn’t enough and threw out another two: “This is enough for your retirement. No need to keep the shop open later on.”

The old man took the gold and returned to the counter as if he was running from the trouble.

Afterward, Fourth Uncle yelled at Li Qiye again: “Junior, time to do this.”

“Fine.” Li Qiye smirked and finished his cup.

Fourth Uncle said coldly: “It’s not too late to admit your mistakes before I personally break your legs.”

“How amusing. Okay, I want to see how much you have learned from your clan.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh. He sat there unmovingly. This made Fourth Uncle livid from being looked down by a junior like this.

No one dared to treat their Yu Clan in this manner throughout the Grand Sea, let alone on their own territory. There was no way he could swallow this anger.

“Junior, I’ll teach you a lesson in place of your seniors then!” Fourth Uncle shouted and reached for Li Qiye.

“Crack!” Bones broke as the uncle was still speaking.

“Ah!” Blood squirted everywhere. His entire arm was torn off completely.

“You...” The stunned uncle hastily retreated but it was too late.

Li Qiye’s kick was as fast as lightning and struck his chest. The man went flying out of the pub while vomiting blood.

Yu Zhan and the other disciples turned pale from fear. A paragon like their uncle was taken down so easily.

“I’ll spare your lives today out of consideration towards Matriarch Yu. Scram.” Li Qiye threw the bloodied arm at Yu Zhan and uttered coldly.

The boy was scared out of his mind. He didn’t expect his uncle to lose to a single move. After regaining his wits, he ran out of the pub.

The disciples all rushed out and helped their unconscious uncle before fleeing like the wind.

The monarch shook her head after seeing this. That group was just courting death. Fiercest would slay god if one stood in his way.

“Alright, show your real self.” Li Qiye sat down and blew the bean skin off the table. They scattered everywhere on the ground and actually formed a diagram.

It immediately came back to life and turned into a crow. It flew towards the counter and stared at the old man.

He stood up in astonishment instantly. The monarch was surprised. What was so shocking about a crow?

However, she became astounded in the next second. The moment the old man opened his eyes, a terrible time-crossing ray came out.

She felt as if a supreme True God was suppressing the entire location. She couldn’t take a single breath and felt her chair being as cold as ice. There was no way she could stand up before this terrible glare.

A storm surged in her mind. She didn't expect this old man to be such a terrible existence.

“Okay, Zhengfeng, I've drunk your crappy wine. It's time to bring out the good one.” Li Qiye stretched and said flatly.

The gaze disappeared as the old man's eyes became muddled again. He took a deep breath and walked forward with haste to bow: “I didn't expect you to come with your true body, Your Excellency. Please excuse me.”

“Not your fault since you have been stuck here forever now.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Nothing can really interest you in this world, rise.”

The old man finally stood up straight after being granted permission.

“After so many years, you haven't changed at all. However, I'm a bit surprised that you don't care for your descendants. Are you not afraid of me killing all of them?” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Do it if you want to, Your Excellency. Only a bunch of ignorant fools.” The old man calmly answered without a care.

The monarch was startled once more. This old man was actually from the Yu Clan!

“Looks like you have traveled quite far on this path, breaking through the limit already. I'm afraid even Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo didn't reach this level after creating this art.” Li Qiye commented with emotion.

“You're too kind, Your Excellency. I'm only an old man, bored and waiting for death.” The old man smiled leisurely.

“It is a type of happiness to be able to await death. At the very least, time is still affecting you. Nothing is better than this.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The old man forcefully smiled, not knowing how to respond.

“Alright, bring out your good wine already.” Li Qiye said.

The old man entered the cellar and brought out a different jar with more beans for Li Qiye. He personally poured it into the cup as well.

A fragrance filled the pub completely. It was easy to tell that this was the best of the best with just the smell.

Of course, the monarch could only stand to the side. She had no luck to enjoy the wine from a character of this level.

Li Qiye drank it all in one gulp and slowly chewed his beans. He eventually said: “You’re still as skilled as before.”

The old man quietly filled another cup for him.

“Bright Monarch, meet the greatest genius of Immortal Emperor Qian Li’s generation. He is Matriarch Yu’s older brother.” Li Qiye finished another cup before telling the monarch.

She didn’t dare to show the slightest snub and lowered her head: “This junior is a disciple from Heaven Suppression, currently the Pearl City Lord. Greetings, senior.”

The old man glanced at the monarch before looking back at Li Qiye. He smiled wryly and said: “Your Excellency, I’m only a ghost now...”

“I know.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve and said flatly: “You don’t care for mundane matters for a very long time now. However, Gu Zun will die in the future so someone needs to look after Heaven Suppression. I think that in the Grand Sea, you will be living the longest so I’ll leave this to you.”

“Very well, my clan owes you this, Your Excellency.” The old man agreed right away.

“Your clan has paid off its debt already.” Li Qiye smiled.

The old man nodded then told the monarch: “Just come and find me later.”

“Zhengfeng is someone who has lived for three generations. Do not bother him with trivial matters. If Heaven Suppression faces an existential crisis later, then you can ask him for help.” Li Qiye advised.

# Chapter 1583: Tumultuous Years

---

“Someone who has lived for three generations!” The monarch gasped with a coursing chill after hearing this. She had always imagined just how wondrous these top existences would be but it still shocked her all the same. Such a being was beyond her imagination.

Though many Godking ancestors have lived for a long time in Mortal Emperor, they were always buried underground, not a real type of living. It was more apt to call it a hibernation to suspend their lifespan.

Even Godkings and Emperor Candidates would only live for one generation at best before dying.

Thus, living for three was too terrorizing. She has heard about the legends. There was only one person who has lived for three generations - her progenitor, the Black Dragon King!

The old man naturally could see her demeanor. He calmly spoke without any pride: “I’m only a wandering soul living a borrowed life, in no way comparable to a supreme talent like the Black Dragon King. Our situation is not the same.”

“Stop it, Zhengfeng. No need to be humble. You might not be the Black Dragon King’s match but you are still an existence that could only be count on one’s fingers in the nine worlds. When you fought Immortal Emperor Qian Li back then, you actually survived under his true Imperial Massacre. That’s an exceedingly rare achievement.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

This stunned the monarch completely. She even shuddered and understood just how powerful this being he had just introduced her to was.

A true Imperial Massacre could only be unleashed by an emperor when they channeled the power of their Heaven’s Will to unleash

the ultimate blow of a life treasure.

Keep in mind that for millions of year now, many have claimed to have challenged emperors. Despite their defeat, it was still a commendable feat.

In fact, during these challenges, the emperors only used ordinary methods to fight them without utilizing the Heaven's Will due to the unimaginable power of the latter.

Alas, this old man was able to survive a true attack from Immortal Emperor Qian Li. This was quite a feat.

"It's because the emperor didn't wish to kill me." The old man sighed.

His humility didn't diminish his achievement. Even an Emperor Assailant would die before a true attack like this.

The monarch finally regained her wits and bowed again towards the old man. Words were meaningless at this point.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve at her and said: "Leave for a bit, I have some personal business to discuss with Zhengfeng."

The monarch quietly nodded and left with her mind still shaken. This old man was definitely powerful enough yet he still acted so respectfully towards Li Qiye. Who the hell was this guy to make a peak existence treat him in this manner?

Li Qiye smiled and said after she left: "No need to be so reserved. Sit. Not too many are left now. I can only have some nostalgic conversation with you and your sister."

The old man bowed his head before sitting. He was only a junior before the Dark Crow in spite of his considerable power.

"Your Excellency, you're here for Gu Zun?" He asked.

"I suppose. That and I want to take back Heaven Suppression. I don't necessarily have to kill him because of the Black Dragon King but a punishment must be in order. If he obeys, then I'll throw him

into the eye of the sea but I will kill him if he is still unrepentant.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Gu Zun’s achievement is incredible but he’s still only a worm before you, Your Excellency. If you give the order, I’m sure there are three to five beings who will capture him for you.” The old man said.

Li Qiye gently sighed in response: “I know. Heaven Suppression is not only the effort from Lil Blackie, I put a lot of work into it as well. Gu Zun’s talents are supreme, unfortunately, he was born with the bones of a traitor. Blackie tried hard back then so I gave him a chance. Oh well, if he gives up, I’ll imprison him again. If not, then death.”

The old man remained quiet. Gu Zun might be considered an invincible character but the Dark Crow far exceeded him. Li Qiye didn’t even need to personally take action to destroy Gu Zun. This topic wasn’t worth discussing.

“Your sister made it out of her death meditation.” Li Qiye commented.

The old man nodded: “Yes, she’s still not stable for the time being. Just need some more time.”

“Then I won’t go see her so soon.” Li Qiye nodded: “It’s not easy for her either but she had been working all this time. You are different, when you reach the end of your path, it’ll turn you into loathful being.”

“It’s not good at all. Even the heavens do not want to take me out of disgust. I’ll have to keep living like this.” The old man smiled but his expression was gloomy.

“[People in this world are bounded by love.](#)” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Qian Li has her own path and you your own. To tell the truth, I can’t judge you. You’ve made your own choice after all.”

The old man sighed in response: “[I can understand why the](#)

emperor didn't like me. She can persevere on this path unlike me. Someone as amazing as her can go much further."

"Your talents are countless times better than her. It's not a problem of perseverance either, just your heart." Li Qiye pointed at his heart and said : "In the beginning, you didn't jump out of Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo's grand dao and only fallen deeper within."

He paused for a moment: "I'm not saying that his grand dao ruined you. With your talents, you could have jumped out of it but you chose otherwise. Because of this, Qian Li became emperor and you are here. I don't know what to say, you're just wasting your time and waiting for death right now."

"Your Excellency, you tried to guide me back then." the old man smiled and said: "But I'm too stupid to shine. I have let you down."

"Like I said, everyone will have their own path and will." Li Qiye disagreed: "As for shining, your achievements right now are great enough. Few could even reach your level right now but the world could have been your playground. Ultimately, you chose this small pub instead."

"I don't know what you are choosing." Li Qiye said lightly.

"Choosing to wait for death then." The old man calmly said without sadness.

"I can't comment then. Keep walking with your choice." Li Qiye had to smile back.

"You have always been like this, Your Excellency. It is a shame that I couldn't help the Black Dragon King in that shattering battle." The old man said with a tinge of emotion.

"I'm sure Lil Blackie didn't care. The two of you embarked on two completely different paths so I can't see you two together. He's more domineering and aggressive. If he saw your lifeless and gloomy appearance now, he might have kicked you flying to the

horizon.”

“You’re right, that’s why he never cared for me even when he visited the Yu Clan so he never went here. Sigh, I don’t want to see him either or I’ll just slow him down.”

“Forget it, it’ll just end with a fight given your personality and his.” Li Qiye laughed: “Of course, when the two of you were younger, you boys were two hot-headed kids, always helping each other.”

“You, Blackie, and Qian Li... Honestly, it was quite gratifying to see three amazing talents. Though you didn’t come from my tutelage, I was happy to hear people refer to your group as the ‘three heroes’”. Li Qiye sighed at this point.

“Yes, those were some memorable years.” The old man recalled: “I was a step ahead and couldn’t join your camp but I have never forgotten about your teaching. In my heart, you are still my master. Alas, I have let down your high expectations, failing to become an emperor like Qian Li and a tyrant for three generations like Blackie, just a nobody in the end.”

He still smiled without any regrets.

Due to the veiled nature of the Chinese language, certain words and phrases can be interpreted differently. The word for emotions here can be love, but in order to play it safe, I chose emotion. In fact, I lean towards love more since I’ve seen this line used for love in different novels but playing safe is always my style for ED. Also, Qian Li is revealed to be a girl here with the “her” pronoun. Some other translators might have a different interpretation of this particular line than me. Edit #2, after reading the next line, love is the right choice, not emotions.

Ah, now love makes more sense for the line above than emotions. I’ll leave these translation notes here for fun

## Chapter 1584: Memories

---

Li Qiye was glad to see the old man's calm demeanor: "The choice of each individual determines their future. This can all happen with a single thought. It certainly did for the three of you."

He sentimentally continued: "Qian Li's background was a bit worse, same with her conditions, but her confidence never wavered. She knew she would become a dragon one day to obtain the Heaven's Will. That's why she became an emperor. As for Lil Blackie, he loved challenges. Such a madman who only wanted to fight. That's why he ruled for three generations. He broke through his own limit in each of them while taking a different path each time."

He stared at the old man and said: "As for you, Zhengfeng, you are either hiding or just plain weary of it all. That's why you don't want to leave your nest and ultimately became a shopkeeper with only this lamp as your friend."

"I agree. Qian Li had her imperial path while the Black Dragon King had his tyrannical dao. As for me, I probably can't defeat my inner demon." The old man said.

"Inner demon? Others might have this but not you. This path leads to being loathed by the heavens. What inner demon can you have? What is scarier than being unwanted by the heavens?"

"That makes sense too." Zhengfeng smiled leisurely.

Li Qiye only shook his head and drank the fine wine. In his eyes, Zhengfeng didn't have that many flaws. It was just that his chosen path leads to darkness.

Yu Zhengfeng was Matriarch Yu's older brother and was from the same era as the Black Dragon King and Immortal Emperor Qian Li.

When he was younger, the Yu was only a minor clan. His sister

back then suffered a terminal illness. All the famous doctors gave up on her.

In order to save his sister, he tried his best at cultivation to become an invincible being. The karmic nature of life willed it so. During an adventure, he found Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo's supreme grand dao. Henceforth, he embarked on a peerless path.

There were geniuses everywhere in that era. He, the Black Dragon King, and Immortal Emperor Qian Li were always together because of Li Qiye. Others praised them as the three heroes back then.

Later on, Zhengfeng fell in love with the emperor. However, she was hellbent on her imperial path without looking back while not having any feelings for him. Zhengfeng eventually lost to her in the competition as well.

This made him dejected. Despite having the power to challenge an emperor, he grew bored of the mundane world so he returned to Discover to open a pub and spend his day doing nothing.

As for his sister, the Dark Crow back then gave him the right treatment. However, the materials required were too difficult to find since they were immortal medicines.

Thus he had no choice but to seal his sister until Immortal Emperor Qian Li found the mythical immortal medicines. Zhengfeng then asked Li Qiye for help and they finally cured Matriarch Yu.

A bit later, Matriarch Yu joined the Black Dragon Legion. This was when Zhengfeng completely shut himself from everything and the world forgot about him.

No one knew that there was an incredible master hiding in this tiny pub.

“Your Excellency, I admire you the most out of everyone. I don't know how you keep on going, I certainly can't do it.” He took a sip

after pouring another cup for Li Qiye.

“Just have to keep walking.” Li Qiye drank and said with a smile.

He smiled wryly: “Easier said than done. You have been walking for millions of years now. That’s a very long period. You must have suffered endlessly, bidden farewell to many love ones and even buried them yet you didn’t go crazy or become a devil. You were certainly not a saint either nor choose to hide from the world. You are yourself after the arduous time, never changing your determination regardless of the perilous challenges. The winds and rains accompanied your journey with the stench of blood. Black Dragon King once said that if he had experienced so much pain like you, he would have started to hate the world and become a monster! Your dao heart isn’t something we juniors can compare to.”

He finished his cup in one gulp before letting out a long sigh.

Li Qiye actually didn’t know what to say and continue drinking quietly. The guy was right. He has sent away and even buried many loved ones. He had many friends and loyal confidants once but ultimately, he was the only one left. Numerous had died from old age while he continued to live on!

The most painful thing in life was not death. It was watching those close to you die one by one. At this point, death became sweet relief.

“There’s a fair amount of people who have lived just as long in this world.” Li Qiye said flatly.

Zhengfeng disagreed: “I know, you have told me about them but they’re not actually living, only sealing themselves by sleeping. It’s not the same as you who tread on the mortal plane for generations. Time and mundanity washed your body but they can’t break your will and heart!”

“It’s good to be alive.” Li Qiye answered. It wasn’t the perfect

response since he didn't know how to help the guy.

Zhengfeng understood all the logic and rationalities right now. If he wanted to jump out of his dao, he must rely on himself. The problem was that he didn't care for it so Li Qiye couldn't help him at all.

Zhengfeng nodded and drank silently.

The two continued drinking. After a while, Zhengfeng slowly said: "I saw Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo on the grand dao!"

Li Qiye pondered for a bit before smiling wryly: "Sigh, the emperor has too much of an influence on this dao. At this moment, he might be better and had walked further than you so that's why you can see him."

"He can't leave it and is just walking around in a circle. If you go on, you'll be just like that stubborn guy." Li Qiye shook his head.

"He's already an emperor, why is he going back on this path?" Zhengfeng found this puzzling.

Li Qiye elaborated: "Who knows? Just him, probably. The guy has always been a controversial emperor, different from the others. Even after ascending, he kept to himself. Maybe in his mind, he's too far removed from the world."

"It could be fate then. The emperor and I are somewhat similar." Zhengfeng answered.

Li Qiye said earnestly: "Perhaps. The two of you have failed in love before but this isn't the reason or the end. The path is still beneath your feet. It was created after he became emperor. He didn't embark on it during his youth. Moreover, his heart remained unchanging despite romantic frustration and pain, that's why he could still become emperor. But as for why he returned in the future, it might not be related to worldly matters. You and Mu Zhuo are not the same." Li Qiye stared at Zhengfeng and finished.

Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo was a very reclusive and mysterious

emperor. For many emperors, they would shine after ascension. Moreover, there would be many friends and followers both before and after. Many were willing to fight for them.

Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo was an exception. He had always been fighting alone for that was his nature.

“Maybe he’s lonely? That’s why he returned to this path.” Zhengfeng speculated.

“Not necessarily.” Li Qiye denied: “He had two marriages on top of many lovers. His heart shouldn’t have been too lonely.”

He was born in a declining family. Because of this, his fiancée betrothed to him at a young age married a richer husband later on.

This inspired the emperor and he started to rise and become a famous hero with sufficient power. This allowed him to marry the prettiest girl in the region.

Unfortunately, tragedy struck again. His wife had an affair with a peerless genius in the nine worlds. It was quite a blow to the emperor.

He gave up all of his wealth and dissolved his sect before slumbering in a forest away from the world.

After skipping a generation, he came out and shocked the world once more to eventually become emperor.

With that, he found many lovers and eventually married one world’s most beautiful woman.

Such achievements were the lifelong pursuit of many people. However, the emperor felt life was dull and left quietly. From then on, no one heard of him again.

He didn’t create a sect nor pass down his grand dao. Though future generations cultivated his emperor laws, he wasn’t the one passing them down.

# Chapter 1585: Lonely Grand Dao

---

Zhengfeng drank his wine and eventually spoke: “I really want to know why the emperor chose to return on this grand dao.”

He also cultivated the grand dao left behind by the emperor. However, this was not one the emperor used for his ascension.

The name of this dao was World-weary, created by Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo after his ascension. He didn’t cultivate it either and only left it behind. Zhengfeng came across it by chance later on.

“You can go ask him.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “The nine worlds might not have anything that piques your interest but you can leave this pub and broaden your horizon. With that, you can personally ask the emperor why someone as invincible as him chose to walk on this grand dao.”

In a sense, the emperor was invincible and his life was perfect. There was no reason for him to pick the World-weary Dao. No one would be able to understand his choice.

Zhengfeng contemplated for a moment before shaking his head: “I don’t want to know then. He is him and I am me.”

Li Qiye took his time before replying: “Do you want anything else besides waiting for death?”

“Yes.” Zhengfeng smiled: “To die here in the same place that birthed me. That’s all I want.”

“Alright.” Li Qiye smiled wryly: “You win. There’s nothing I can do since it’s your choice.”

“No matter what, I am still grateful to you. I’m aware that you have tried several times to change me during my stay here at the pub. I can only let you down though, all I want to do is remain here.” Zhengfeng said.

Li Qiye took another sip: “No, maybe you have the right idea. After all, to die in your birthplace isn’t bad, just like the leaves falling down towards the roots.”

A momentary silence filled the air. After a while, Li Qiye broke it: “Yes, dying in your birthplace is nice but for me and many Immortal Emperors, it is too out of reach. Many of them thought about returning one day to die here but they can’t. I can’t either. It’s good that you can enjoy this.”

“That’s why you are great, same with the emperors. You all want your death to be meaningful and worth it. That’s why you guys insist on struggling without a moment of respite.” Zhengfeng freely laughed and said: “Emperors were able to become emperors and you were able to become the eternal dark hand, it must have something to do with your charisma and personalities. I, on the other hand, can only die at home.”

“I hope so, for a meaningful death, that is.” Li Qiye laughed as well.

Zhengfeng poured another cup for him while he gulped them down. Li Qiye said: “Okay, let’s not talk about these things any longer. The second reason why I’m here is because I want your fire spark. I have a cauldron for weapon refinement that is missing a fire spark so I need to borrow it from you.”

“You want the World-weary Flame?” Zhengfeng asked.

Li Qiye nodded in response: “You certainly have the purest World-weary Flame.”

Zhengfeng quickly went to get the spark for him.

Finally, it was time for Li Qiye to leave after achieving his purposes here.

Before leaving, he stared at Zhengfeng one last time and smiled: “Brat, the days are long still so keep waiting to die. Maybe I’ll die before you in the future.”

“Your life is eternal. I will definitely die before you, Your Excellency.” Zhengfeng smiled back.

They had many things to say. At their level, it was hard to find someone to talk to but before the departure, words couldn’t come out.

After Li Qiye left, Zhengfeng went back to his counter and curled up then slowly closed his eyes into a slumber. The tiny fire inside the lamp was still jumping like before. This faint light illuminated his face in a surreal fashion.

It was peaceful for this old man and his small pub residing in the little alley. It seemed that no one would pay attention to it until the day of demise.

The monarch who has been waiting outside quickly caught up to Li Qiye. She had to look back at the entrance after taking several steps. She couldn’t understand why a supreme master was hiding away from the world in this place. Though there were many reclusive masters in the world, they would pick paradisiacal and picturesque locations instead.

Alas, this great character was hiding in such a rundown pub. No one would believe such a story.

“No need to look.” Li Qiye shook his head and sighed while walking: “He’ll stay there forever. Won’t be easy to get him to come out.”

After a long time, she couldn’t contain her inquisitive mind and quietly asked: “Young noble, who is stronger between Matriarch Yu and this senior?”

Needless to say more about Matriarch Yu. She was someone who fought against Immortal Emperor Yin Tian and was recognized to be an Emperor Assailant. As for the old man, he was Matriarch Yu’s older brother who has lived for three generations.

“You think he’s too unknown, right? Power can’t be measured by

prestige. Matriarch Yu indeed has the power to assail an emperor but Yu Zhengfeng, he's much stronger."

"Stronger than her, even?" The monarch was shaken and eventually asked for elaboration: "Rumor has it that those who could survive one hundred moves from an emperor are considered assailants."

Li Qiye laughed in response: "One hundred moves as the baseline? Which idiot told you that? Too many people would be assailants then. Plus, not all emperors are bloodthirsty. They actually love talents and juniors so they go easy on the challengers."

He shook his head and continued: "This belief emanated from a few fools who are trying to increase their own worth and reputation."

"Then what's considered a real Emperor Assailant?" She said with great curiosity.

She has heard many things about this title. The most popular belief was the one hundred moves requirement.

"An assailant isn't that easy to come by." Li Qiye explained: "The normal standard is that against the regular power of an emperor who is not holding back, they just need to last one thousand moves to be qualified for this title."

"Regular power?" She didn't understand this.

"It means not using the Heaven's Will." Li Qiye continued: "The standard is strict so emperors can't go too easy. They have to take it pretty seriously against the real ones. For example, the ones who can last one hundred or two hundred moves were usually young talents and the emperors went easy on them."

He slowly recalled: "When Matriarch Yu fought against Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, the emperor actually used a life treasure and nearly shattered the world. Matriarch Yu relied on her own

incredible strength to last more than one thousand moves. The emperor recognized her strength and bestowed her the assailant title. The other self-claimed assailants can't compare to her at all."

She has heard of Matriarch Yu's legends before but no one knew the exact details of the fight or how long she had actually lasted. But now, this revelation took her like a storm. Matriarch Yu actually made it to the one thousand moves mark against an emperor using a life treasure, the grand dao, and not holding anything back. Even without using the Heaven's Will, each strike could destroy the world. Thus, one could imagine how mighty Matriarch Yu used to be.

# Chapter 1586: The Three Levels At The Top

---

The Peacock Bright Monarch has never seen an Immortal Emperor before but she could imagine their wondrous strength. Just think about it, these were the existences who won after battling the entire nine worlds. They were matchless during their own generation.

Matriarch Yu's strength was indeed enough to walk proudly across the nine worlds. The monarch eventually calmed down and said: "Then what about Senior Yu?" She glanced back at the pub after saying this.

Li Qiye said that Zhengfeng was much stronger than Matriarch Yu.

"Zhengfeng." Li Qiye said: "If we were to separate the levels, he is considered an Emperor Contender."

"Emperor Contender? What's the differentiation?" She was puzzled.

"You think there are only Emperor Assailants around? Ordinary people can only make contact with this level. The truth is that the real powerful beings at the top can be divided into three levels. They consist of top Godkings and Emperor Candidates in the following order: Assailant, Contender, Rival." He chuckled after clarifying.

The world only talked about assailants. In the eyes of cultivators, assailants were the strongest below Immortal Emperors.

This wasn't the case. People at this level understood that there were dividers with great disparities.

Because of this, the existences further classified themselves into the three levels.

"What's a contender?" She asked.

Whenever people talked about Emperor Assailants, they were full of reverence. In fact, being exposed to characters of this level alone was already amazing and worthy of pride. On the other hand, she rarely heard about contenders so she had no understanding of this concept.

“Very simple, if you can last one thousand moves against an emperor using the power of the Heaven’s Will, then you’re a contender. Of course, there’s another standard. If you can survive against a true Imperial Massacre, then you’re also a contender regardless of whether you used your own power or relied on a treasure.” Li Qiye said flatly.

If an emperor was already invincible? Just how powerful would they be with the Heaven’s Will? She wasn’t aware of the latter but knew just how impressive it was to last one thousand moves under these conditions.

“It still counts when you use a treasure to survive the true massacre?” She had to ask.

“It’s not that easy. You think you don’t need strength just because of some treasures?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “You think the Heaven’s Will is a joke? If you’re not strong enough, the treasures won’t do. Even if the treasures can survive the blow, just the impact and shockwave alone could render you to a mist of blood. Only top existences could actually resist this.”

“Excuse my short-sightedness.” The monarch felt that she had underestimated the power of the Heaven’s Will.

“It’s not surprising because you haven’t seen the Heaven’s Will yet. Even if you do, you won’t think much of it, not until it truly erupts. That’s when you’ll come to realize how frightening it is. It’s the condensation of the energy and essence of an entire generation!” Li Qiye smiled and said.

She finally had a clear concept about an Emperor Contender.

“Then how many moves did Senior Yu last against Immortal Emperor Qian Li?” This prompted her next question.

“The two of them fought for a long time for the Heaven’s Will before his eventual defeat. After she became emperor, Zhengfeng wanted a final fight before she left. He still lost in this battle, resulting in his bad choice in the future despite creating a supreme grand dao for himself.”

Li Qiye became dejected after saying this. The guy gave up his own dao and maintained Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo’s World-weary Dao instead. He could have escaped from it instead of hiding in the pub. Alas, he had no intention of doing so.

The monarch quietly listened to this old tale. Despite not hearing the exact details, she could faintly guess that they were tragedies of sorts.

Li Qiye eventually smiled wryly: “The emperor prepared for the battle because Zhengfeng was her greatest rival. She used the Heaven’s Will right away in that world-destroying bout. He lost after more than two thousand moves.”

“More than two thousand moves!” The monarch shouted after being indescribably shocked.

Matriarch Yu lasting more than one thousand moves against Immortal Emperor Yin Tian was impressive enough but Zhengfeng lasted two thousand moves against the Heaven’s Will. Only one word could describe his power - invincibility!

“It’s to be expected.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “He has been on this dark path for a long time. Didn’t you see his current appearance? Completely cursed and loathed, even the high heaven doesn’t want to look at him. That’s why he can only wait for death.”

“There is a price for everything. Waiting is even more agonizing than death itself.” He finished.

“Waiting for death?” She glanced back at the pub again.

“You may not understand the meaning behind this. Let me give you an analogy. For example, even the most delicious meal tastes like wax. Your heart is a dead tree, no love nor hatred towards anyone. You’re basically living like a piece of rock. That’s the meaning behind waiting for death.”

The monarch was slightly stunned after hearing this. Living in life without any emotions, that’s just a walking corpse.

“That’s why waiting for death is very painful.” Li Qiye lightly said: “He hoped that the emperor could kill him, that will be a meaningful death so he asked her to go all out with a true Imperial Massacre. He used his most brilliant strike to fight against it. That move was his pride so he could die with dignity, going out in a blaze of glory. The massacre rendered his body to ashes instantly. However, being loathed by everything like him allowed him to live under the attack. Afterward, the emperor couldn’t bear to attack again, not that she couldn’t kill him.”

Li Qiye sighed again. The World-weary Dao was a path towards despair.

In Zhengfeng’s mind, to be killed by his crush’s true massacre was a good death. That would be the perfect ending for him. Alas, he still survived the ultimate attack and the emperor found it tasteless to continue aiding someone in suicide.

“Since he has grown tired of the world, he doesn’t want to do anything anymore. Otherwise, even if it is a sea god with the Trident, he could still take them on.” Li Qiye softly said.

She finally understood why Li Qiye entrusted her and Heaven Suppression to Zhengfeng. Someone of his level was indeed qualified to be the backing of Heaven Suppression.

# Chapter 1587: Invincible Grand Dao

---

The monarch took her time absorbing the information before asking the next question: “Then what is the requirement to be an Emperor Rival?”

“This one isn’t as easy.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “For eons now, few characters of this level have appeared. If there must be a requirement, then a rival has to fight evenly against an emperor.”

The monarch immediately thought about someone after hearing this, their progenitor-the Black Dragon King.

The king reigned for three generations before fighting against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong! He was the shining star in the heart of all disciples from Heaven Suppression.

So many in this region grew up hearing about his tales including the monarch. That’s why she was proud of being a disciple of Heaven Suppression!

“Yes, the most famous among them is probably the Black Dragon King.” Li Qiye continued: “He’s indeed an Emperor Rival.”

The monarch couldn’t help but say: “But I heard Immortal Emperor Ta Kong is dead. Our progenitor killed him.” She heard about the battle with Space Trample Mountain before. The emperor’s corpse was annihilated by someone from Li Qiye’s side.

“There are strong and weak emperors too. That’s why I consider the Black Dragon King to be a rival. For example, Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng, Empress Hong Tian, or Immortal Emperor Fei and Immortal Emperor Hao Hai... if he were to fight against these emperors, it’s hard to say. Immortal Emperor Ta Kong isn’t among the most elite group.”

“Then how does he rank among the emperors?” She was full of curiosity. After all, he was a well-known emperor and the only

person to have been killed after shouldering the Heaven's Will in everyone's mind.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: "Hard to say. The emperor still had a lot of room to grow. We can't look down on him just because he was slain by the Black Dragon King. I can only say that he was too anxious. If he kept on walking down the imperial path, who knows what kind of achievements he would have up above the nine heavens. It's no coincidence for someone to become an emperor. He was the most excellent on this path in his generation. Talents, origin, merit laws, weapons, the most powerful protectors; all of this does not guarantee your spot as an emperor. A firm dao heart is also necessary. One would have the chance to reach the grand dao as long as they do not give up. However, if they don't have the courage to persist, all of the prior advantages are useless. An emperor must be able to withstand all obstacles and resist all temptations to ascend and bring about storms in a larger world."

He stared at the horizon and continued: "Disciples from Heaven Suppression shouldn't look down on Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. His achievement proves his exceptional abilities. During his period, he wasn't the most talented and didn't have the greatest background either but why did he become emperor in the end? Was it out of luck?"

He shook his head and said: "Emperors aren't made from luck. Others might be able to accomplish great things due to luck and favorable circumstances but this is not the case for emperors. The moment they embarked on the heavenly path, it meant that the whole world was their enemy. Numerous opponents who wanted to push them towards death. Challenges and assassinations along with the perils that accompany cultivation..."

"... Each emperor was battle-hardened and walked on countless bones and blood. Even if they had an invincible protector in the shadow, they must experience these challenges. Otherwise, they

would only be sheltered flowers, unable to create their own supreme grand dao or being accepted by the Heaven's Will. A life of battle and never giving up, that's an emperor!"

Li Qiye spoke solemnly. Although Immortal Emperor Ta Kong opposed him, he truly appreciated the guy's imperial qualities. As for his personalities and morality, that was a different matter.

"Each emperor has their own admirable quality; they are role models for future descendants. Thus, you cannot look down on Immortal Emperor Ta Kong just because he was your progenitor's enemy and was taken down by him. Do not think that he only got lucky to become an emperor."

The monarch was stirred after hearing Li Qiye's explanation. She took a deep breath and bowed: "I'll carve your words into my heart and won't forget them, Young noble."

In fact, Li Qiye's statement was very reasonable. In recent years, everyone heard about the emperor's corpse so they knew the Black Dragon King killed him. The fate of the king remained unknown.

Being the slayer of an emperor was worthy of pride. This was an insurmountable achievement!

Because of this, many disciples in Heaven Suppression became arrogant. They thought that Immortal Emperor Ta Kong wasn't much at all. So what if he had the Heaven's Will? The guy still got killed by their progenitor!

This sentiment was prevalent in Heaven Suppression. Li Qiye's guidance today was a warning for the future descendants. They weren't qualified to look down on Immortal Emperor Ta Kong even though he was their enemy.

If the emperor wasn't much, then what were they who couldn't become an emperor? Nobodies like them weren't qualified to look down on a person experienced countless hardship and battle to become the only emperor of a generation!

This elucidated the monarch's mind even more. The path towards the grand dao was different from their imagination. It wasn't only about chasing the strongest merit law and treasure. The most precious thing was their dao heart!

"You still have a long way to go. In the future, Heaven Suppression will require your service. You need more than just talents and insightful decision-making abilities. Make sure to have a firm and understanding dao heart. With that, I'm sure the sect will prosper under your control." Li Qiye said slowly.

"You think too highly of me, young noble." The monarch smiled and shook her head: "Sect master is wiser and more talented than me. Her dao heart is firmer as well. The only thing she lacks is experience but she is still young. Her future will be much better than mine."

"No, Zi Cuining has her own mission and path." Li Qiye shook his head.

The monarch was confused and didn't understand the relationship between these two. Of course, she didn't know that Zi Cuining wouldn't be staying at Heaven Suppression. One of these days, she would leave the nine worlds completely.

This was the reason why Li Qiye told the secret of the Immortal Blood Spear to her. One day, she would continue its legend above the nine heavens.

The two of them traveled around Discover without visiting the Yu Clan right away. They took their time wandering randomly.

"Young noble, we're not visiting the Yu Clan?" This prompted the monarch to ask.

"We will but no rush for now. Matriarch Yu has just come out so she needs time to stabilize. No need to bother her." Li Qiye chuckled.

"The Yu Clan will let us see her?" She blurted out but quickly

found this question to be unnecessary.

Despite Li Qiye's assault on the clan's disciples, even Yu Zhengfeng was so respectful towards him. It wasn't difficult for him to meet Matriarch Yu at all.

"The idiots." Li Qiye shook his head: "Killing one or two of them will be for their own good so that they will stop relying on their ancestor's fame to bully others while not having any skills. This is to let them know how vast the world is. Plenty of people are not afraid of their clan."

The monarch found the statement reasonable. If Li Qiye had any insidious thoughts about the Yu Clan, he would destroy it given his temperament. This was only a lesson towards Yu Zhan's group, a type of tough love.

# Chapter 1588: Beat Of The Grand Dao

---

Li Qiye and the monarch strolled through the city because Matriarch Yu still needed time so they weren't in a hurry.

“Young noble, where shall we go?” She asked while accompanying him everywhere.

“There's nothing too special at Discover. Hmm, the twelve scales can be considered one. Okay, since we are here, let's go so you can see it.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

“The twelve scales. I have heard of it but never in person. Rumor has it that the scales can judge someone's potential. The higher the step, the greater the future.”

“It's only a point of reference.” Li Qiye answered: “It's not completely accurate. Of course, it is still very significant because each step is a test for someone's learning capability, determination, and dao heart.”

“Life is always surprising so it's not like success is guaranteed after walking up the steps. You can try if you want.” Li Qiye shook his head and smiled before glancing at her: “With your dao heart and talents, reaching the tenth step isn't a problem. Eleven might be hard, no chance for the twelfth.”

The monarch didn't find this surprising. She calmly smiled: “I'll just an idler in my own domain, no chance of competing against the heroes of the world and especially not the wise sages.”

She spoke as a matter of fact without arrogance or a hint of inferiority.

“You can do whatever, let's go.” Li Qiye led the way.

Nevertheless, the monarch still became interested: “If you go up the scales, how many can you go? I think all twelve shouldn't be a problem.”

Though she has never climbed it herself, many people have said that only supreme geniuses in history could reach the twelfth step.

Li Qiye smiled leisurely: “Just twelve? No, if I were to do it, I’ll reach the top.”

“The top?!” Her pretty eyes widened in response: “Well, I heard the twelve scales are under the restriction of the grand dao. Rumor has it that only an emperor with the Heaven’s Will that has broken all dao shackles can easily climb the twelve steps. Otherwise, even the strongest wouldn’t be able to. Even our Ancestor Gu Zun has only reached the twelfth.”

It wasn’t due to her lack of confidence in him. Keep in mind that their Ancestor Gu Zun was an exceedingly rare genius yet he only made it to the twelfth step.

“In a way, it has nothing to do with cultivation, just your perception, determination, and dao heart. If you are keen enough, you will be able to hear the note within the step and lessen the pressure. Of course, it’s fine if your perception is no good. With a stronger determination and an unyielding dao heart, you can still move forward.”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “The note of the step attacks your mind, not your cultivation. This is the key. So for me, no need to understand it. Just my unchanging dao heart can let me climb without any resistance.”

“The dao heart.” She said softly. Ever since she followed him, he has mentioned the dao heart several times. As a top expert, she understood how important it was. However, he seemed to emphasize it more than anyone else.

“This is where I’m different from the others. You think I’m exaggerating and placing too much of an emphasis on the dao heart?” He noticed her demeanor.

“Well...” She didn’t know how to answer. Of course, she felt that

his logic was reasonable but he had too much of an attachment towards the dao heart.

Li Qiye smiled: “All along, many sects and experts, when choosing their disciples, look at talents then comprehension with the dao heart last. In fact, this belief has wasted many talents.”

He continued on leisurely: “Look, there have been so many incredible geniuses in history but very few could become emperors. We’ll talk about the ten eonic geniuses, how many of them made it to the throne? Just three.”

“As you can see, even the ten greatest couldn’t all become emperors, let alone the others in spite of the quantity. The majority of them died on this path. Why is that?” Li Qiye pointed at his heart: “There’s one problem, their easily shaken dao heart. For geniuses, everything happened too easy for them so they couldn’t handle failure or temptation.”

“Is that really so?” She couldn’t help asking.

“We’ll keep it recent with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. After his ascension, people sang songs of his talents. That’s just flattery. In fact, the young emperor was only above average at best. He wasn’t as gifted compared to Cleansing Incense’s Mu Shaodi, the Stone Medicine World’s Stone Dragon God, or even his strongest general, Xiao Qingtian. But the last one smiling was him. Do you know why?” Li Qiye stared seriously at her.

“His dao heart.” She replied.

“That’s right.” Li Qiye continued on: “You might know the answer but not the actual reasons. For Mu Shaodi, his talents were excellent with a record of three wins and three losses against the emperor. But this was his unbecoming. He thought that he could take a shortcut in cultivation. After losing to the emperor, he couldn’t resist the temptation of taking the easy way out by using an external force. This eventually led to the near-destruction of Cleansing Incense.”

“For the Stone Dragon God, he was quite haughty at a young age and chased Immortal Emperor Ta Kong out of Stone Medicine like a dog losing its master. He was quite imperious until losing three times in a row to the emperor later on. With that, he was completely frightened and didn’t dare to come out again. His dao heart tasted fear.”

With that, he paused for a second: “And Xiao Qingtian, he has an amazing affinity with the saber, a natural born user. His saber seemed to have its own life in his hand. Unfortunately, the emperor’s shadow engulfed him and he couldn’t break out of his own shackles, being only one step away from success. This is due to a weak dao heart.”

“Then what about the emperor?” She asked. In fact, she was very interested in his past since this was her progenitor’s enemy.

“Immortal Emperor Ta Kong had countless ups and downs in his life. So many people have defeated him including Mu Shaodi, Stone Dragon God, and Meng Zhentian. Nevertheless, he never drowned in despair or faltered before losing continuously. He rose again and again while learning from each loss. Because of this, he was the last one smiling due to his unshakable dao heart.”

“Thus, remember, each emperor is extraordinary and amazing in their own way.” Li Qiye meaningfully preached.

“So, dao heart first then the rest like talents. For ages now, how many geniuses have actually cultivated the Eternal Physique successfully? None, with the exception of a little girl with an unwavering dao heart for millions of years. Her pure heart allowed for her to create a unique miracle!”

“The dao heart is first.” She murmured to herself.

“Geniuses are in abundant but not those with immovable dao heart. That’s why it is much more important than talents when wanting to train a future emperor. This is the reason why your Heaven Suppression’s Gu Zun can’t become an emperor. His

talents are even more amazing with people listing him as one of the ten eonic geniuses.” He looked at her and said.

“Why?” She had to ask. People believed that her Ancestor Gu Zun was one of the most gifted beings in the world. Some disciples from the sect actually claimed that he was the greatest of all. Big shots from the older generation said that he was definitely top ten.

However, even such a talented man didn’t become emperor in the end. This made her very curious!

# Chapter 1589: Requirements To Become An Emperor

---

Li Qiye stared at the horizon for a while before answering the monarch's question: "His dao heart is not firm."

"Not firm?" The monarch couldn't believe it: "That's impossible. I heard Ancestor Shan and the others said that perseverance is his strong point."

"That's two different things." Li Qiye shook his head: "You think that it's only about wavering before difficulties? No, temptation is another test."

"Gu Zun is a very patient person. In order to reach his goal, he can endure everything! However, his dao heart has two flaws. First, greed, second, treachery." Li Qiye's eyes turned profound.

"Greed and treachery?" She murmured.

"Ambition is good but when it becomes greed, that's no longer the case." Li Qiye explained: "Gu Zun has a greedy nature and wants everything, like an ant wanting to swallow a big cake but not one crumb at a time. Instead, he wants it all with one bite. The world isn't that easy though." Li Qiye smiled and said.

"What about treachery?" She asked. After all, Gu Zun was still her ancestor. The word "treachery" was quite harsh.

"In order to obtain his goal, Gu Zun could sell everything! He didn't mind betraying everything, including the Black Dragon King!" He stared straight at her and said.

"That's impossible!" She shouted. The king was their progenitor and pride. In their eyes, Gu Zun wouldn't betray him no matter how evil he was.

"Really now?" Li Qiye smiled: "What kind of person do you think Gu Zun is? He's not the Black Dragon King's disciple or child. His

status is on the same level as Lu Zhangsun; as one of the ten eonic geniuses with an amazing cultivation, why didn't the king give him the successor role? Why did he take away all of Gu Zun's position, leaving him with no responsibility? If you are the Black Dragon King, would you waste such a talent? The king was already merciful enough by not killing him!"

The monarch shuddered after hearing this. She has thought about this issue before too but didn't dare to pry further. Ancestor Shan's group didn't wish to talk about it either.

Just think about it, their ancestor was an exceptional candidate so why didn't he receive the great responsibility? Why did he need to wait till Lu Zhangsun die before seizing power? Someone as insightful as the Black Dragon King wouldn't bury a talent for no reason!

Gu Zun would be highly valued and utilized in any lineage but the Black Dragon King went as far as removing all of his roles. Lu Zhangsun himself had always been vigilant of Gu Zun as well!

This meant that Gu Zun had committed an unforgivable mistake back then! But the Black Dragon King was a benevolent person. What kind of mistake was unforgivable?

Then she thought about what Li Qiye has just said and come out with a shocking answer - betrayal!

The monarch became suffocated. Though in this internal vie for power, Gu Zun was Elder Zhangsun's opponent, he was still their ancestor. No one was right or wrong in wanting power. However, betraying the Black Dragon King was a scary matter.

If the disciples were to find out that Gu Zun had betrayed their progenitor before, they would never forgive him!

"Immortal Emperors have certain standards." Li Qiye said flatly: "There is one more crucial requirement outside of the dao heart, an imperial ethics."

“Imperial ethics?” She became attentive right away since this was her first time hearing the term.

“It’s a very vague concept but if I were to be more specific, betrayal is not one of them. An emperor can slaughter millions and wipe out clans, but not betrayal.”

“Why is that?” She asked.

Li Qiye continued on: “Emperors can be merciless but they must have their own rules. For example, the emperors from the Ancient Ming Race, they massacred so many, including their own, as their darkness engulfed the nine worlds. However, they will not betray the Ancient Ming Race and their soul as its member!”

“This betrayal will forever haunt an emperor. As for those who have yet to ascend, this will become an inner demon that might swallow them.” He said seriously.

“I, I heard that Immortal Emperor Ye Ti has massacred many people. His sword is always stained with blood.” She couldn’t help but bring up a different story.

“Immortal Emperor Ye Ti.” Li Qiye smiled in response: “Before becoming an emperor, he really killed many people, even those close to him. However, betrayal never happened, only cruelty. After becoming emperor, he committed even more atrocities but strictly speaking, they weren’t betrayal either. He didn’t betray his heart but simply severed it.”

He stared at the monarch and revealed: “But there’s something you don’t know. He paid a very price for his actions! He might be the emperor that had suffered the most miserable death!”

“Most miserable death? Even emperors would die so pitifully?” She became startled.

Keep in mind that even Immortal Emperor Ta Kong’s death couldn’t be described with these words.

“It’s indeed hard for emperors to suffer this type of death but

Immortal Emperor Ye Ti met a very tragic end, a fate worse than death! For an emperor, nothing could be more miserable than his end.”

“A fate worse than death.” The monarch shuddered. It was understandable for ordinary people to be victims of this fate but for an emperor? How terrible was it?

She simply couldn’t imagine it at all!

“That’s why emperors must adhere to certain rules or they’ll pay a heavy price for their actions one day. The villainous heaven might not kill anyone. However, the judgment of the world has never spared anyone!”

She was stupefied before finally commenting a while later: “Even an emperor can’t do whatever they want.”

“That’s how it is, even the villainous heaven is subjected to this. That’s what a rule is. Even if you can surpass the high heaven, you will still need certain rules and guidelines or that height is impossible to reach.”

“Gu Zun is very talented with a patient dao heart but he doesn’t follow the rules necessary to become an emperor.” Li Qiye said slowly: “Even though the Black Dragon King favored him, he still couldn’t become one! In the end, the Black Dragon King personally cut off his fortune.”

Hearing this secret left the monarch stunned. She didn’t know what Gu Zun did back then but to earn such distrust from their progenitor meant that the sin was beyond salvation.

“Okay, no need to talk about old stories. Let’s go to the twelve scales.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

The monarch hurriedly followed him. Nevertheless, she still couldn’t calm down since Li Qiye had revealed too many things to her.

The twelve scales weren't just twelve steps. To be more precise, it was a fair-sized mountain.

It was located inside Discover with surrounding mist and clouds. A stream came from the summit and flowed around the mountain to eventually form a lake.

There were many hills in the vicinity with pavilions and corridors built next to them.

It was a very popular place in Discover. Visitors would come and visit at least once to test their own future. This was not a natural mountain. Rumor has it that it only showed up at Discover during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation. Another tale told that Matriarch Yu and the Black Dragon Legion used a supreme method to move the scales into this city.

Some believed that before it became a property of the city, it used to be a divine mountain for a godly race and served as its barrier!

# Chapter 1590: The Twelve Scales

---

How Matriarch Yu got the mountain from this mythical race remained a mystery. In short, she placed it in Discover right after. From then on, people called it the “twelve scales” and it became a beautiful scenery in this place.

Because the Yu Clan didn't place any restriction, anyone could come and try to climb it. It was a test of comprehension, determination, and dao heart. Cultivators were more than happy to try at least once, especially the younger ones. If they could climb up high, they would gain fame and reputation.

Some even considered it to be an examination mountain. The higher one could climb, the greater the future potential.

Because of this, many geniuses have tried since Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation. Of course, some didn't care for this test either.

Each day, many experts would come to watch or try to climb. The younger ones were much more eager since they wanted to prove their worth!

There were even more people here than normal, resulting in a lively and young crowd. The reason was very simple - the golden daughter of the Yu Clan, [Yu Yulian](#) wanted to try.

The youths came to cheer her up. Moreover, Matriarch Yu had come out so many older experts came to Discover as well. Their juniors followed along. This was a good chance for them to befriend her.

People were everywhere around the scales. Conversations began to form.

There were twelve large steps that made up the scales. Each step was at least three meters high so it wasn't easy to go up at all. Cultivation didn't matter here because the entire mountain was

created from the shackles of the grand dao. Only an Immortal Emperor who has broken through these chains would be freed from suppression. Otherwise, cultivation was useless.

This was because the higher the cultivation, the greater the pressure from the dao shackle. It wouldn't help the ascension at all.

Each step had its own note. Others wouldn't be able to hear anything, only the climbers.

This note was the sound of the grand dao. After each successful step, another note would ring.

With sufficient talents, one would be able to understand the mysteries of the dao note. With that, they would have a much easier time climbing the steps.

Of course, it was fine to be average talent-wise. With enough determination and a firm dao heart, they could still withstand the dao note.

This sound became increasingly more powerful at the higher steps. It would resonate with the climber's own grand dao and create a proportional pressure. Thus, the steps were a great challenge to all of the characteristics required for cultivation.

If one could reach the eighth step, it meant that they were dragons and phoenixes among men. Above this step, they could leave behind a shadow. This was a record of their achievement and glory.

Because of this, one could see many shadows on these upper steps. They consisted of famous people.

Thus, the young generation considered the eighth step to be the challenge. Once successfully reaching this particular height, they would have made it and be considered a genius.

As the saying goes, a man must leave a long-lasting legacy. Because of this, the young ones wanted to leave behind their

shadow on these steps in order to become famous.

The eighth step had many shadows of all forms and ages. The ninth level had much fewer compared to the previous.

As for the tenth floor, it was a sad amount that could be counted with one's fingers.

Needless to say about the eleventh floor, there was only one shadow. It was a supreme figure that was quite young. It had an imperious presence just like a crownless tyrant.

There was only one shadow for the last one as well, a man in gray. Despite being very fuzzy, this shadow has carved itself on the twelfth step.

Many people stared at these steps enviously. There weren't that many shadows after the ninth step. However, there were some in the middle of the ninth and tenth.

This made the crowd curious. One person asked: "What's the stop between the ninth and tenth?"

"Nine and a half." One young cultivator from Discover said.

An eagle-eyed youth saw the shadows there and shouted: "Aren't that the Sky Dragon King, Golden Dragon Prince, and Hai Lin?"

These three were in the middle zone. Their shadows looked as if they were there in person.

"Yes, they're the most brilliant geniuses from the last generation of our Grand Sea." A cultivator from this region proudly claimed.

"He's right. The Sky Dragon King is in charge of the Crouching Dragon Cliff now. She was capable of challenging any other prodigy in the past." One fan explained: "The Golden Dragon Prince is in charge of Mu Zhuo's Demonic City. He's quite famous now too. Hmm, Hai Lin came out a bit later compared to these two."

"That may be but he's quite fierce, causing trouble everywhere. I

mean, he's still alive now after being chased around so much." A demon recalled.

"These guys are quite amazing but the tenth step has even more frightening people." One powerful cultivator looked at the tenth step and said: "If I could leave my shadow on the tenth step, there would be no regrets in life."

There were three shadows on the tenth step. Two were a bit older and the last one was very young.

"That's [Ding Yuanhou](#) from our demon race, the most amazing Godking in the Grand Sea. Rumor has it that he can assail an emperor." A demon proudly pointed at one of the shadows and said.

The mass was drowned in admiration after hearing the name, Ding Yuanhou.

He didn't have the same astonishing battle record like Matriarch Yu. However, he withstood the Difficult Dao Era and eventually became a Godking. Some even said that he was the greatest genius after the Black Dragon King's generation.

Because of this, many demons viewed him as their pride.

"That person is an ancestor from our Heaven Suppression!" In the middle of the field was a Heaven Suppression disciple. Of course, he was only an ordinary outer-sect disciple.

"Ye Jiuzhou!" Someone blurted out but immediately shut up right after since they felt that this was very disrespectful.

This particular shadow was left by Heaven Suppression's invincible ancestor, Ye Jiuzhou!

He was very famous in the Grand Sea due to his current authority. People were quite wary whenever his name was brought up.

"What a pity... Wolong Zi. If he is alive right now, his

achievements would be amazing, no less than Ancestor Ye and Dingyuan Hou.” A cultivator who had some ties with the sea demons sighed and said.

“The Crouching Dragon Cliff is amazing this generation, one sect with two prodigies. Wolong Zi and his sister, Wolong Xuan are brilliant. Some do think that Wolong Zi is more gifted than his sister though. What a shame, even the heaven is jealous of his great talents so he died during the Life Reduction.” Another person lamented.

Those who knew him felt quite bad. Even the ones who had never met him sympathized as well.

Wolong Zi was famous alongside Heaven Suppression Goddess. Unfortunately, a peerless genius like him fell to the tribulation.

Two different Yu but same pinyin

This could also be Marquis Dingyuan or Lawkeeper Marquis. Dingyuan is a pinyin name for a battleship/province but I would do Lawkeeper over it. But then again, it depends on if he's an actual marquis or not. We'll find out later.

# Chapter 1591: Yu Yulian

---

Many were mourning for Wolong Zi. There were only three people who could leave their shadows on the tenth step - Dingyuan Hou, Ye Jiuzhou, and Wolong Zi!

Zi was the youngest among the three but also the first to die while the other two were unstoppable and influential Godkings.

Some said that if Wolong Zi were still alive, his future achievements wouldn't be inferior to the other two. All eyes fell upon the eleventh step now with its one shadow. It meant that only one person has climbed up to this level before.

The discussion stopped when someone quietly stated: "Princess Yu is here."

They quickly turned around and saw a young woman approaching. With her white dress, she looked like a lotus blossoming on the water surface. This was a beautiful woman with luminous and seductive eyes.

"Miss Yu." Many quickly rushed forward to greet her. They were quite friendly since some aimed for flattery. Of course, some of them had a crush on her too.

Yu Yulian was very famous among the young generation of the Grand Sea, a highly sought-after lady.

"I'm here today to test it out and didn't expect to see so much support. Thank you, everyone." She said slowly with a touch of shyness.

"You're too reserved. Princess, to be able to see your ascension is our honor." One youth said with haste: "Our Majesty once said that you are the heavenly daughter of the contemporary, standing shoulder to shoulder with Heaven Suppression Goddess and Sky Dragon King, one of our three great beauties."

This youth came from the Mu Zhuo's Demon City and was

Golden Dragon Prince's martial nephew. His self-chosen title was Peacock Prince. His flattery act wasn't for himself but rather the Golden Dragon Prince.

The prince had wanted to propose to the Yu Clan for Yu Yulian. However, this was put aside due to Taijun's emergence. Because of this, the Peacock Prince wanted to use this opportunity to put in good words for his uncle.

"No way, the Golden Dragon Prince is too kind." She smiled and said, quite pleased with the comment.

Everyone knew that Wolong Xuan and Zi Cuining were at the top of the young generation on top of being extremely beautiful. Yu Yulian naturally couldn't compare to these two.

However, many wanted to flatter the Yu Clan so they placed her on the same level as the other two. She was very willing to hear these praises while feeling very smug inside.

As the moon surrounded by the stars, she walked towards the twelve scales with her eyes fixated on the man alone on the eleventh step.

"Brother Long's temperament is matchless in history. He will definitely become emperor." A strange glimmer flashed in her eyes. She didn't try to hide her adoration at all.

The young cultivators here also looked up at the shadow above. He alone stood proudly on the eleventh step.

Everyone became serious after seeing his aura. Even those who liked Yulian couldn't help but sigh. They became gloomy because this young man was supreme indeed.

"Young Emperor Long is indeed unique in this generation. When our king became sworn-brother with him, our king said that he will become Immortal Emperor." The Peacock Prince who was a demon pheasant said with admiration.

"Yes, who can compete with Brother Long nowadays? He will be

victorious for sure!” Yulian’s eyes stared lovingly at the shadow and wanted nothing more than to jump into its embrace as she said: “He already has a grand completion Immortal Physique.” She revealed an intoxicating smile at this point.

“Yes, Young Emperor Long could even slay a Nine Worlds’ Godking. No one can stop him.” The geniuses here were utterly convinced.

“[Long Aotian](#).” Those who had a crush on Yulian became very annoyed as they murmured this name. Nevertheless, they could only express this annoyance quietly.

Members of the crowd were stirred to hear this name. It was too overwhelming and powerful in the Grand Sea. He had many young fans as well with countless noble daughters and princesses.

Being the successor of the Soaring Immortal Sect, he was destined for greatness and excellence! His cultivation didn’t shame his background since he had a grand completion Immortal Physique already. Furthermore, his current level was at Emperor Candidate, only lacking the recognition of the Heaven’s Will.

The news was so shocking since he was already a grand completion user when he showed himself to the world with the strength of a candidate. He would be the magnificent son of the heavens, the object of countless praises and love.

He shall become the unbeatable master in this generation. How could others not notice him?

Yulian was elated to talk about him: “Brother Long still hasn’t ascended just yet but he already has the style of one. After meeting and talking to him the first time, I can see that scene already, when he fought against the world alone for ten days and nights without tasting defeat.”

Her complexion had a peachy color after saying this. Her heart rapidly bumped with the resurfacing memories. She fell in love

with him at first sight and wanted nothing more than being his woman even [without any official title](#).

The people who had a crush on her didn't have an easy time looking at her current appearance but they didn't say anything.

The crowd was stirred with her message. The Peacock Prince had to admit: "Young Emperor Long challenged the heroes of the world and killed five Godkings in a row. Even the strongest Nine Worlds' Godking, Hai Guai, was taken down too. He's the only one who can have such a battle record."

"That's right, the Denary King can take on the whole world, that's an unparalleled feat!" The others quickly parroted.

Some weren't too happy about the praises so they quietly scowled. After the Soaring Immortal Sect descended, they took up a sea region. Its inhabitants were naturally unhappy.

Moreover, they weren't the nice crowd either. Despite being afraid of the Soaring Immortal Sect's reputation, they didn't hand over their territory so easily.

They were offsprings between demons and sea monsters. Thus, they were adept at battle, especially in the ocean.

The great powers here joined forces to attack the Soaring Immortal Sect. A war erupted right away.

Despite having the numerical advantage, the result was too predictable. The Soaring Immortal Sect flattened all of them.

This displeased the other lineages in the Grand Sea because it was a blatant occupation. This sect claimed to be a traditional and orthodox lineage with a benevolent outlook. Naturally, others criticized them for this hypocritical action.

Because of this, Long Aotian sent a message to the world that his sect was only temporarily borrowing this sea region. If any sect was unconvinced, they could challenge him. If he were to lose, then not only would Soaring Immortal leave the Grand Sea

instantly, they would also compensate for all the losses with Immortal Emperors' manuals and weapons.

Thus, everyone's attention was grabbed by these treasures. No one cared whether the invasion of the sect was lawful or not.

Remember, this was a sect with five emperors. Their manuals and weapons would have been incredible. Many experts rushed forwards like bees to challenge him.

Aotian created a stage on the vast sea. Anyone could challenge him without any restriction in numbers or otherwise.

In a short time, many demons, sea monsters, and even famous experts attacked him. They not relied on number, some even used assassination methods.

The battle astonished the entire Grand Sea. Even some dust-laden Godkings decided to participate.

I've said this before but this is a super meme name in China.

Like wife or concubine

# Chapter 1592: Soaring Immortal Successor

---

Though many experts frantically tried to kill him, Aotian was insanely powerful. His grand completion physique was virtually untouchable as he put down one enemy after another.

Bones piled up on the battle stage after waves of assault, leaving others with no room to stand. Blood stained this region as this battle shocked the very soul.

After ten days and ten nights, Aotian killed too many Virtuous Paragons to count with five Godkings among them. One of the five was the strongest ancestor of the sea monsters, a Nine Worlds' Godking!

Such an invincible existence was still no match for Aotian!

A Nine Worlds' Godking was a supreme existence in the mind of many cultivators. Just a flip of their hand could take down a lineage but this person was still killed by Aotian!

No one tried to attack him anymore after this. All of the enemies that had yet to attack were frightened by him.

Because of this battle, his brilliant self became even more radiating and dazzling. People started calling him the Denary King after the drawn-out fight.

Mind fluttered after hearing this story again. Yulian - who was smitten by him at first sight - viewed this battle accomplishment as her pride.

With her rippling eyes, she said: "Brother Long is not only the Denary King, he has also reached the eleventh step. Who else can be as great as him in this world?"

Her suitors became even more dejected. They were eclipsed by Long Aotian, the heaven's favorite child.

"Long Aotian isn't the strongest. Remember, there is someone on

the twelfth step.” An unhappy youth snorted and had to state.

With that, many turned their attention towards the final step. There was someone with a gray robe. The shadow was very faint so it was hard to see his face.

This shadow stood there without the imperious temperament of Long Aotian. It wasn't as gallant either but even time itself couldn't erase the mark of the shadow.

“That's Ancestor Gu Zun.” Even Yulian quietly sighed after this man was brought up.

“Ancestor Gu Zun? The legendary ancestor from Heaven Suppression? I think people say that he is Ye Jiuzhou's master.” Not too many youths here understood Gu Zun because, in this generation, he has maintained a low-profile. His disciple, Ye Jiuzhou, was much more famous.

Only the people from the last generation who knew more about him understood how frightening he was.

“Yes, the strongest in Heaven Suppression, one of the ten eonic geniuses, the greatest talent in the world, and the only person who can compare to my ancestral grandmother.” Yulian said proudly.

The Yu Clan and Heaven Suppression had many ties. Their ancestral grandmother was the strongest general in the Black Dragon Legion. Though their clan was not under Heaven Suppression's jurisdiction, many disciples from this sect still viewed the clan as part of the legion.

Because of this, Yulian has heard about Heaven Suppression from her seniors so she knew more about Gu Zun compared to the other youths.

“One of the ten eonic geniuses!” Some jumped from shock after hearing this.

Such a title was quite frightening. Even Long Aotian didn't dare to claim this title. However, the fact that Gu Zun's shadow was up

on the twelfth step showed his amazing ability.

In a short time, the crowd was completely stunned while thinking about an eonic genius. Would a person be completely flawless? No one dared to question her statement. Heaven Suppression was too prestigious in this region.

At the same time, Yulian said that he was on the same level as Matriarch Yu. This was enough to show his power. Matriarch Yu's assailant title wasn't a boast. Immortal Emperor Yin Tian himself said so, thus, there was no need to question it.

Of course, some were curious about why such a great man like him was so unknown. They didn't dare to ask though.

The disciples of the city, on the other hand, became quite proud since their ancestor has made his mark on the twelfth step.

"Lin Hao is here." Someone said during this moment of silence. The crowd turned right away.

A handsome young man with the bearing of a noble came about. His looks alone made him look quite exceptional.

The young cultivators here quickly said hi to him with a blatant servile intent. They couldn't be blamed for doing so. Lin Hao was from the Soaring Immortal Sect. He was the disciple of an elder, responsible as a messenger.

Though his status was far inferior to Long Aotian, a difference of the heaven and earth, he was still from the soaring sect. His status and cultivation were much stronger than many successors of the great powers.

He was quite arrogant, being the disciple of an elder, so when others came to greet him, he simply nodded back.

He finally let go of this prideful act after seeing Yu Yulian and amicably spoke: "Princess, I'm here to support you after hearing about your climb."

He could show off his identity before others but not Yu Yulian. The Soaring Immortal Sect was great indeed but they still needed to give the Yu Clan some respect, or more importantly, Matriarch Yu.

Yulian was very friendly as well after seeing Lin Hao: “Brother Lin, it is our pleasure to have you here. May I ask where Brother Long is?”

“Princess, Eldest Brother is leading the troops to wipe out the remnants. He’s deep undersea right now, I’m afraid he can’t come.” Lin Hao answered right away.

“Young Emperor Long is unstoppable for real. He destroyed the sea monsters’ armies and made them run back to their lair. Even their Godkings would run for their lives after hearing his name.” Someone quickly flattered.

For many experts here, being able to curry favor with Soaring Immortal was a great honor. If these youths could form some ties with Soaring Immortal, their sect would even promote them.

“That’s right, Young Emperor Long is the Immortal Emperor in this generation.” Someone else chimed in.

Lin Hao became smug after hearing all the praises. He agreed with all the comments too. Spring came on Yulian’s charming face. She viewed her crush as her pride especially when others praised him.

“Brother Long is the son of the high heaven. It’s no problem for him to take down those losers.” Yulian smiled and said: “No matter what it is, if Brother Long requires my clan’s help, just say the word. Our clan will do our best and won’t refuse even if it is jumping into the fire.”

“I will tell Eldest Brother about your kind words.” Lin Hao busily said.

“How can you make such a thoughtless statement when it comes

to the honor and well-being of the Yu Clan?” A leisurely voice came right after Yulian expressed her loyalty to her sweetheart.

A young man slowly came forward. There was nothing special about him and no one would give him a second glance. There was a servant on his side. These two were naturally Li Qiye and the Peacock Bright Monarch.

Of course, Li Qiye normally wouldn't care about the young ones. However, it was not a trivial matter when Yulian is speaking for the Yu Clan about pledging their allegiance to Soaring Immortal.

# Chapter 1593: Fierces Notoriety

---

The young cultivators glanced at each other after seeing Li Qiye. They were puzzled - who was this man? Why did he dare to say such a thing?

In fact, the crowd was also confused. No one recognized him so they didn't know of his identity. Some of them didn't care due to his ordinary appearance.

Yu Yulian wanted to use Lin Hao to profess her feelings towards her crush but being interrupted by a nobody left her sour. She uttered coldly: "No need for an outsider to worry about the Yu Clan's business."

Li Qiye simply glanced at her and shook his head: "Your ancestors' prestige will be destroyed in the hands of you fools!"

Her expression changed greatly as she furiously said: "Who are you? Daring to run your mouth like this!"

"Princess, no need to worry about who he is. Allow me to teach the ignorant brat a lesson for blustering before you." Lin Hao immediately told Yulian.

This was the nice part of being a disciple from Soaring Immortal. They had no qualm about opposing anyone in the world.

"No need for Young Noble Lin and princess to dirty your hands." The Peacock Prince from Mu Zhuo's Demonic City jumped out with the intention of currying favor. He pointed at Li Qiye and shouted: "Brat, being disrespectful here is a sin worthy of death. Come, I'll break your limbs in just one move."

The Peacock Bright Monarch in the form of a servant shook her head and chuckled. These people didn't know who they were dealing with. They won't know how they will die either.

Li Qiye leisurely smiled at the Peacock Prince: "What's your name?"

“This young noble is the Peacock Prince of Mu Zhuo’s Demon City!” The prince sneered and smugly stated his title. After all, he was a famous character in the Grand Sea.

“Peacock Prince?” Li Qiye laughed in response and told the monarch standing next to him: “A demonic pheasant naming itself peacock, this is besmirching the word.”

The prince’s face reddened. He hated when people talked about his origin the most. Being a pheasant gave him a sense of inferiority so now, embarrassment turned to anger. He screamed: “Little animal, come accept your death!”

The other young cultivators here watched amusingly on the sideline. Yu Yulian and Lin Hao, on the other hand, didn’t care for this unknown junior.

“Slap him.” Li Qiye ordered the monarch next to him, too lazy to care about the Peacock Prince.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The monarch instantly attacked. The Peacock Prince might not be bad among the young generation but there was too much of a gap between the two. He was slapped a dozen times in just a blink.

His cheeks flared red with blood dripping down his lips while being completely confused. Once he calmed down, he spat a mouthful of blood with all of his teeth falling out.

She had already gone easy on him or he would be dead.

“Animal, I’ll kill you!” The mad prince roared with an aura rushing to the sky. Several hundred sharp blades appeared before him and acted like arrows with extreme speed. They instantly pierced at the monarch.

She easily shattered all of them with a bang. Next, she had him by the neck.

“Ah!” The monarch slightly clenched her fist and shattered his dao body to reveal his true form. A pheasant appeared before

everyone. Its feathers were quite beautiful. The beast was screaming while being grabbed by the monarch.

“Young noble, what should I do now?” She asked while staring at Li Qiye.

The prince’s life-and-death was up to Li Qiye’s answer.

“Just a junior, no need to kill him.” Li Qiye said flatly without looking at the pheasant.

“Boom!” She casually threw him on the ground causing more blood to ooze from his mouth. He struggled to turn back to his human form.

The guy was lying on his stomach in fear, not daring to even get up.

Everyone was aghast including Yu Yulian and Lin Hao. The prince’s cultivation wasn’t bad among the young cultivators but this guy defeated him in one move. It seemed as if killing him was even easier than crushing an ant.

More importantly, he was only a servant. Thus, this ordinary master must have been even more frightening and powerful.

The two’s expression changed. They were keen enough to know that these were masters.

“Who are you?” Yu Yulian questioned. Nevertheless, they came from invincible sects and could still maintain their composure.

“Li Qiye.” He looked at her and said insipidly.

“Fiercest!” Someone shouted after hearing this name.

In the shortest possible time, everyone here turned pale. The majority quickly retreated so the area around Li Qiye suddenly became empty. The youths here kept their distance.

Even Yulian and Lin Hao staggered backward in fear.

Not everyone might know the name, Li Qiye, but the whole

world knew of the title, “Fiercest”.

This person annihilated Space Trample, massacred Azure Mysterious, and banished Soaring Immortal. Such deeds and notoriety were preeminent. The inhabitants of Mortal Emperor trembled before his name.

The crowd took a deep breath and stared at Li Qiye in horror while their legs quivered. They knew that opposing him meant death, even imperial lineages weren’t spared. Juniors like them were nothing before Fiercest.

They were aware that Soaring Immortal was unstoppable since its coming. The only time it suffered a loss was to Li Qiye’s banishment. He had done the impossible.

Because of this, even Lin Hao was scared. Fiercest wasn’t someone that would be deterred by his sect’s prestige.

“Looks like some of you have heard of my name before.” He said flatly.

Yulian and Lin Hao were quite powerful, capable of killing ordinary Godkings. Alas, the disparity between them and the banisher, Li Qiye, was too great.

“The Yu Clan’s juniors are too disappointing compared to Matriarch Yu.” Li Qiye stared at Yulian and gently sighed.

He wasn’t looking down on her but was lamenting the fact that she couldn’t be polished into gold. In the past, Matriarch Yu used to be his confidant and an important figure in his administration. Unfortunately, Yulian wasn’t even a tenth as exceptional as Matriarch Yu at the same age. He was sad at the Yu Clan’s lack of capable successors.

Yulian considered herself a heavenly daughter that was on the same level as Wolong Xuan and Zi Cuining. Her expression darkened after hearing his evaluation.

“Li Qiye, you might scare the Grand Middle Territory but no

need to show your bravado at the Grand Sea, especially at Discover.” She coldly uttered.

“I can’t do as I please here?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile after hearing this: “Is it because of you, the Yu Clan, or Soaring Immortal? Someone of your level can’t understand whether I am capable of carrying out my whim or not.”

“Heaven Suppression is also here, not just Soaring Immortal. Yes, and the Black Dragon Legion as well!” She went on.

Meanwhile, the crowd was watching with bated breath. No one dared to comment thoughtlessly. The notorious Fiercest has scared the soul out of many.

“You’re courageous indeed.” Li Qiye shook his head: “It’s a pity that you rely too much on your ancestor’s prestige. Go home, don’t throw away all your face here. Be a good girl and think about your mistakes and focus on the dao. Your future will be better in this way.”

In his eyes, Yulian and Lin Hao weren’t qualified to talk to him. He was only giving such good counsel to her due to Matriarch Yu and would be too lazy to care for anyone else.

Her complexion kept changing from being livid. Fury overwhelmed her mind since she has never been shown such contempt before.

“Li Qiye, you won’t be invincible much longer!” Lin Hao finally mustered some courage and claimed: “There is still someone who can trample and defeat you, you’re not the best genius in our generation!”

# Chapter 1594: I Have Thirteen Palaces

---

The crowd stared at Li Qiye and understood what Lin Hao was implying.

Li Qiye became amused and said: “Is that so? I would like to hear who is it that wants to be my enemy.”

“My Eldest Brother, Long Aotian!” Lin Hao proudly declared: “He shall be an Immortal Emperor, the real invincible being!” He became smug after saying this.

Regardless of their opinion about Long Aotian, most admitted that only Long Aotian was qualified to compete against Fiercest and no one else.

“Long Aotian? Never heard of him.” Li Qiye leisurely responded with a smirk.

The boys who had a crush on Yulian became happy after hearing this. Only Fiercest would be able to attack Long Aotian like this. The other cultivators also smiled wryly.

Anyone else would seem foolish and arrogant to make such a comment but it sounded so natural coming from Fiercest.

Lin Hao had no response in a short time. All he could do was glare awkwardly at Li Qiye.

“Brother Long is the first of the young generation to have a grand completion Immortal Physique. He fought against the world and killed five Godkings. Even a Nine Worlds’ Godking couldn’t stop his incredible arts.” Yulian defended Aotian. Her face blushed again while recalling his tales with rippling eyes. She was full of pride whenever she talked about him to the chagrin of her suitors.

This comment entertained Li Qiye. He said: “You like this Long Aotian?”

“None of your business!” She angrily glared at him while feeling

slightly embarrassed due to her one-sided crush being blatantly revealed.

He smiled and shook his head: “Even if he likes you, nothing good will come of this. Soaring Immortal shouldn’t have come out with such fanfare and definitely shouldn’t have let its disciples compete for the Heaven’s Will, at least not in this generation.”

“If our Soaring Immortal wants to come into being, we shall do it! If we want to have the Heaven’s Will, our successor shall become Immortal Emperor!” Lin Hao angrily backed up his sect.

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “It doesn’t matter if this is the idea of your elders or the successor, this is a futile attempt with only one result, death!”

“You, you are too confident! Brother Long has a grand completion physique with the arts of five emperors on top of supreme weapons. No one can stop him!” Yulian was unconvinced.

Love could make a person blind. In her mind, Long Aotian was unstoppable so she naturally became unhappy when Li Qiye put him down.

Li Qiye understood her thoughts and gently chuckled again: “How can a grand completion Immortal Physique boast in front of me?”

“You! At the very least, Brother Long has a grand completion physique, you still don’t have one!” She angrily retorted.

Li Qiye felt like destroying her fantasy and leisurely stated: “I have thirteen palaces.”

This sentence rendered her breathless. In her opinion, Long Aotian was number one in all aspects. No one could match him. However, he didn’t have thirteen palaces.

The other spectators gasped. This was an achievement worthy of arrogance.

“Brother Long know the arts of five emperors and have created a supreme dao in all of history!” She claimed again, unwilling to give in.

Li Qiye smirked again and said: “Thirteen palaces.”

“Brother Long has a triple saint talent and he's the Denary King!” No one could stop the perfect man in her heart!

“Thirteen palaces.” Li Qiye leisurely repeated.

“You...” She had no response and could only leer at him. Despite her crush's perfect conditions, he couldn't surpass Li Qiye in terms of palaces.

The monarch nearby didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Li Qiye was clearly teasing Yulian but she didn't let up her undying love.

“My Young Noble's thirteen palaces are enough to look down on the world.” She wanted to wake Yulian up: “As for grand completion physiques, there are no less than one hundred in history but there is only one person with thirteen palaces.”

The monarch aimed to wake Yulian up but the girl's expression became even uglier. She took this as a deliberate attempt to humiliate her. Even a servant was doing so.

Li Qiye simply chuckled and didn't say anything else.

“That's about right.” Many youths found the monarch's statement reasonable. The ones who like Yulian felt that she was too apt.

After careful consideration, many young geniuses felt that Long Aotian was indeed blessed by the heavens, a top contemporary genius, but his achievement wasn't unheard of in history.

This wasn't the case for Li Qiye. Thirteen palaces were one-and-only. It was a miracle created by him, more than enough to carve his name down history. This was an achievement comparable to

being an emperor.

Yulian was at a loss, unable to come up with another argument to defend her sweetheart. However, she saw her love's shadow on the eleventh step. Her eyes flashed with a new idea so she pointed at the twelve scales: "Li Qiye, you're amazing indeed so you probably don't mind climbing the scales. Brother Long easily left his shadow on the eleventh step so you can try to. If you can't reach that spot, then you're no match for him and definitely can't compete for the throne. It shows his peerless talents, dao heart, and determination."

She stared gloatingly at Li Qiye and believed that he wouldn't be able to reach the eleventh step. After all, ever since the generation of Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, only Long Aotian has reached the eleventh step out of so many climbers.

"That's right, it was a piece of cake for my Eldest Brother to reach the eleventh step." Lin Hao loudly chimed in: "Try it if you dare. Show that you can compete with my brother."

The two of them were under heavy pressure, especially Yulian. She refused to believe that Longtian was beneath Li Qiye.

After hearing this, Li Qiye shook his head and smile: "Love can make someone foolish. Only the twelve scales, not some insuperable test. There are plenty of people who can reach the eleventh step in this world, not just your sweetheart. It is just that they do not care for fame so they don't bother."

"Hmph, really now?" Lin Hao said aggressively: "They're just afraid of losing faces. These geniuses that do not care for fame probably can't even reach the eighth level. That's why they don't try at all in order to avoid losing some reputation."

Lin Hao always had his Elder Brother's back regardless of the situation. He was certain that Longtian would become emperor.

"Is that your excuse?" Yulian pushed on further after seeing Li

Qiye's disinterest on climbing: "We won't force you if you don't want to but do not go around and say that you're the only one qualified to become emperor since you still have a long way to go before competing with Brother Long!"

She was particularly pleased with this victory. If he were to find out, perhaps he would look at her in a different light and like her even more.

# Chapter 1595: Climbing The Scales

---

Li Qiye smiled while looking at Yulian: “Does this Long Aotian guy know that you like him?”

Yulian blushed because of this public revelation. She angrily stared at him and said coldly: “None of your business.”

Li Qiye teased her again: “I don’t really care for your romance since nothing good will come of it but I do have to say, daring to love and hate so openly is not a bad thing. If you like him, then go confess, no point in hiding it. Even if you do more things for him, he won’t know about them and you will be nothing more than an insignificant stranger in his mind.”

Li Qiye had no problems with Long Aotian either. However, Soaring Immortal purposely came out in this generation and this has sealed their fate. They have broken the agreement of past so there was nothing left to say.

His blatant statement embarrassed Yulian while the boys who like her became justifiably annoyed as well.

“Li Qiye, stop running your mouth here!” She shouted: “If you can’t climb the scales then just admit your defeat, no need to buy time!”

“If you don’t want to do it, it’s not too late to give up.” Yulian coldly uttered.

“Very well, I’ll break your dream then so that you won’t keep on falling in deeper. It’s not too late to turn back.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

Li Qiye only wanted to take the monarch for a look but didn’t expect to encounter Yulian’s matter. Since this was the case, it was time to wake her up or it would be too late when her lover turned to ashes in the future.

Everyone watched with anticipation after hearing Li Qiye’s

confirmation. They stared attentively at each and every move of his and wondered how many steps he could reach.

In the past, Aotian's achievement at the eleventh step has already rendered the young generation breathless. No youth dared to challenge him but it was different for Fiercest.

Some believed that if he couldn't make it to the eleventh step, he would be overshadowed a bit by Long Aotian. Even if he could reach this step, it would only show that he would be a capable rival.

They knew that he was at a disadvantage because he was doing it after Long Aotian. The guy has robbed all of the fame. Even if Li Qiye could reach the eleventh step, the reaction wouldn't be as resounding as before.

He needed to reach the twelfth step to be on the same level as the eonic genius, Gu Zun, in order to gain the limelight and surpass Long Aotian.

Otherwise, he wouldn't be shining as brilliant by just going evenly.

Meanwhile, the youths who had a crush on Yulian prayed quietly for Li Qiye to break Aotian's achievement and reach the twelfth step. They wanted someone to take Aotian down a notch and rob him of his reputation. That was the only way for Yulian to know that her sweetheart wasn't that excellent.

In fact, even the monarch became a bit anxious. It wasn't about whether he could beat Aotian or not. She was wondering if he could actually reach the peak.

He stated so a while ago so if he could actually stay true to his words, it would be quite frightening. Some people believed that only Immortal Emperors could break through the dao shackles to reach the peak.

At this time, he has walked onto the first step. A note

immediately played.

Outsiders couldn't feel anything but this wasn't the case for the climber. This booming sound was the noise of the grand dao, as sonorous as a bell. It instantly attacked the dao heart with a devastating force as if it could tear the body apart. It instilled a primal fear; someone with a weak dao heart would immediately kneel on the spot.

However, Li Qiye had no need to use determination and comprehension. There was no need for him to understand this particular dao note since his dao heart alone was sufficient! It has been polished by the tides of time, not something these twelve scales could touch.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!" He took one step at a time before the leering crowd.

"One, two, three..." Someone counted quietly each step.

"Nine, ten..." He finally made it to the tenth to the dismay of Yulian. Her breathing became rapid as she made a cross with her hands and secretly pray for him to fail the eleventh step.

At this time, he purposely stopped to look at the group.

"Is that it?" One spectator said with a hushed voice.

Yulian heaved a sigh of relief at this sight.

"Should I continue?" He cheerfully smiled.

The crowd exchanged glances with uncertainty. They didn't know whether he could keep on going or was only preparing an excuse. Perhaps it could be a provocation as well.

Yulian slowly said: "This is a friendly competition. If you can't make it any further, don't force yourself. Losing to Brother Long isn't shameful at all. He's the high heaven's son!"

"That's right." Lin Hao thought Li Qiye was trying to get off easy as well. He snorted in response: "Losing to the future emperor is

just fine. Don't force yourself, come down already."

People saw Li Qiye standing motionlessly on the spot and thought that he was giving up. They became disappointed in his failure to take Long Aotian down.

"Looks like I have to try then." He smiled and took another step.

"Eleventh!" Another cultivator shouted when he made it to the next step. Some people couldn't help clapping.

He glanced at Long Aotian's shadow and chuckled before reaching out with one finger.

"Boom!" Aotian's shadow was instantly destroyed with nothing left.

"No!" Yulian shouted with a pale complexion.

"That's too fierce." The crowd was astonished after seeing this casual yet destructive gesture.

Keep in mind that Li Qiye was withstanding the same pressure as Long Aotian. The shadow left behind was created by the dao note. It wasn't so easy to break.

"What did you do?!" Lin Hao howled after seeing this.

"No challenge at all." Li Qiye ignored them and took another step towards the next.

"Twelfth step!" Another screamed after seeing this.

"So amazing." The young cultivators here began to cheer.

"The guy is unreal. Such dao heart and talents can compare to an eonic genius!" Some were utterly convinced.

Li Qiye chuckled again and shook his head while looking at Gu Zun's shadow. He shot out another finger strike.

"Boom!" Gu Zun's shadow turned to ashes too!

"You!" It was the Heaven Suppression disciples' turn to become angry and glare at Li Qiye!

# Chapter 1596: To The Top

---

The crowd was astounded to see Li Qiye destroying Gu Zun's shadow. Everyone gasped and stared at each other in amazement.

“Fiercest is just too ferocious. Who could actually match his fearlessness?” One spectator murmured.

Everyone knew that Heaven Suppression was the leader in the Grand Sea. Even though it didn't have five emperors like Soaring Immortal, it was more influential in this particular region. But now, Li Qiye destroyed Gu Zun's shadow without any hesitation. This was a prelude to war.

How many in this world would dare to challenge both Heaven Suppression and Soaring Immortal at the same time? Perhaps only an emperor.

The disciples here were furious. This was their territory yet Li Qiye dared to commit such a crime. It was humiliating for their sect, a direct challenge even!

But there was nothing they could do. Fiercest has been aggressive for a long time now with wanton regards for the consequence. So what if they were angry? Fiercest wouldn't care for disciples of their level and could crush them with a single finger.

The monarch smiled wryly as well. It was all she could do.

Everyone stared at him at this moment without being able to utter a single word. There was no doubt that Fiercest has exceeded Long Aotian. The guy being able to reach the eleventh step was incredible enough, worthy of his name.

However, Fiercest has reached the twelfth floor. This meant that he was above Aotian. The guy might not be Fiercest's match in the upcoming war for the Heaven's Will.

Just when everyone thought he would stop on this final step, he raised his foot again.

“No way?” People’s eyes widened after seeing this.

“That’s not possible, the twelfth step is the highest suppression already.” One murmured.

Yulian felt the same way. She had heard her seniors said that no one besides Immortal Emperors could reach the top due to the dao shackles present. The twelve scales had an amazing origin. It was the ultimate treasure from a divine race and was brought here by Matriarch Yu. It wasn’t just a simple test but also a weapon that could protect Discover and their clan.

She almost shouted after seeing this with her mouth agape with incredulity. In her mind, climbing the eleventh step alone was already amazing, enough to surpass all the current geniuses.

But now, Li Qiye wasn’t even happy with the twelfth step and wanted to reach the top. This guy was a complete monster.

“Bang!” Li Qiye actually made it up there and another sonorous note struck. Though it wasn’t overly loud, it was a hammer striking everyone’s heart.

“Impossible!” The first to scream was Yu Yulian in astonishment. She couldn’t believe her own eyes and almost became a fish out of the water. She wanted to speak several times but the words were stuck in her throat due to the utter shock.

“This is too unreasonable!” The crowd was stunned speechless as well.

Gu Zun was an eonic genius who made it to the last step but now, Fiercest even went further. If Gu Zun was one of the ten greatest geniuses? Then who the hell was Li Qiye? An emperor?

Even the monarch in her disguise couldn’t stay calm. She wasn’t confident in his previous claim but he has indeed done it now. She became very afraid due to the significance behind this. She thought about Yu Zhengfeng. This was an existence capable of fighting against an emperor yet he was still respectful towards Li

Qiye.

Such a being didn't need to act so servile towards anyone, not even an emperor. After careful consideration, she was stricken with fear. Just what kind of terrorizing character was Li Qiye?

She felt a chill at this point and realized that anyone who opposes him in the future will have a bad end, including Soaring Immortal and her Heaven Suppression! This realization made her take a deep breath.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” More notes came from the scales in continuation like the sound of the world.

“Bang!” Prostrating noises came about. The young cultivators here all kneeled before this burst of sounds.

It wasn't out of their own volition since they were completely helpless before the noises. Each note was a supreme order of the worldly grand dao. This was the will of the world so one had to prostrate.

Some gritted their teeth in order to resist but the more they struggled, the more powerful the notes. Because of this, some were bleeding heavily from their knees after being pushed down to the ground.

The stronger masters here could withstand several notes, but the weak dropped down after just one or two.

After Lin Hao kneeled down, Yulian couldn't handle it either so she still fell down after another note. She was powerless in resisting its might.

The last to kneel was the monarch. She was much stronger than the others but she eventually lost her footing and dropped down.

Lin Hao was completely unwilling. As a disciple from Soaring Immortal, he has never knelt down before anyone outside of his sect. He lifted his head and tried to get up but the slightest movement invoked a greater suppression. His knees started to

bleed profusely.

“Rise.” Li Qiye said flatly above the notes: “I grant you absolution.” Having said that, he stared at the kneeling mass.

He didn’t intentionally suppress all of them. The twelve scales weren’t a simple test. It was once a supreme location for divine bestowment on top of being a defensive weapon. Its power could instantly take someone down. Yulian and the others simply couldn’t withstand its power.

Everyone finally heaved a sigh of relief since the power instantly disappeared. Nevertheless, they were still pale and confused.

Some glanced at Li Qiye once, not daring to steal a second glimpse. They have heard of his fame before but now, they have actually experienced it in person. Fear overwhelmed their mind and told them that it was best not to oppose Fiercest.

Yulian didn’t dare to speak either. Her sweetheart was perfect and peerless but Li Qiye’s achievement today has overshadowed him. This robbed her of her voice completely.

“Some, some trickeries must be going on!” Lin Hao shouted after calming down.

# Chapter 1597: Storm

---

Li Qiye stared at Lin Hao while standing above the twelve scales and said: “What, can’t accept defeat gracefully?”

“It’s absolutely impossible!” Lin Hao turned red but he still stubbornly said: “Everyone knows that the scales are affected by the grand dao so no one can reach the top. Something is amiss here, he must have cheated. Either that or the scales aren’t working!”

As someone who has been a fan of his Eldest Brother since youth, he couldn’t accept Li Qiye destroying the shadow or reaching the top since even an eonic genius like Gu Zun couldn’t do so.

Because of this, he wanted to nitpick or even question the validity of Li Qiye’s achievement.

Many looked at him without speaking. Some found displeasure in his choice of words but they chose against speaking up since he was from Soaring Immortal.

Yulian didn’t like this statement either and gave him a cold stare. His questioning the twelve scales was the same as questioning her Yu Clan.

Ever since Immortal Emperor Yin Tian’s generation, so many people have climbed the scales without issues. It can be said that the scale was a different symbol for their clan so his skepticism was an attack on their integrity. Thus, even Yulian who had a crush on Aotian became dissatisfied with Lin Hao.

Li Qiye replied flatly: “Someone who can’t bear losing and having to resort to accusations like you should die.”

“You!” Lin Hao immediately retorted: “Li Qiye, are you trying to silence me?! Maybe you are afraid of others finding out your trickery so you want to kill me to avoid questioning! Even if you can kill me, can you also kill everyone here?! What about everyone

else in the world?! You can't shut all of us up regardless of how many you kill!"

Lin Hao wanted to besmirch Li Qiye at this moment while dragging everyone else into the fray, onto the side of opposing Li Qiye.

The youths here stared at Lin Hao; some even moved away from him. Even a fool could see his intention.

Normally, anyone else would try to support him in order to curry favor with Soaring Immortal. But now, they weren't going to joke around when facing Fiercest, a mass murderer. If Lin Hao were to really drag them into this mess, Fiercest would kill them without hesitation. They didn't want to be buried alongside Lin Hao.

"Just a clown thinking that he's something, deserving of punishment." Li Qiye glanced emotionlessly at the guy and casually slapped.

"Boom!" Lin Hao couldn't even dodge in time or block it. He was blown flying with blood and teeth falling out.

He fell on the ground but his words were still strong: "Li Qiye, even if you kill me, the rest of the world will still know the truth. Do it! Soaring Immortal disciples have never been afraid of death!"

"Just a worm, you think I care what others say about me?" Li Qiye replied: "If you wish to die, so be it."

With that, he pointed his finger at the youth. It was the most casual of strikes but Lin Hao couldn't dodge at all. The gap between the two was too immense so Lin Hao closed his eyes, awaiting death.

"Show mercy!" A shout came about at this key juncture. A loud banging noise came next with a breaking sound. Debris went flying everywhere.

A huge shield flew forward to stop Li Qiye's finger strike. It was still destroyed completely with pieces scattering everywhere.

Nevertheless, Lin Hao was able to survive the ordeal.

A strapping old man landed down in front of Lin Hao. More shields emerged around him while he held a saber, ready to fight without the slightest sign of carelessness.

“Master!” Lin Hao shouted happily and crawled up.

“Don’t worry, our warships are coming right away.” The old man nodded but his eyes remained fixated on Li Qiye. He was consoling his disciple while telling everyone here at the same time, especially Li Qiye.

“An elder from Soaring Immortal.” One youth was aghast.

The crowd quickly retreated since they understood the implication of an incoming warship.

Though an elder wasn’t considered a high-ranking member in Soaring Immortal, he still emitted a frightening aura. Just an elder was already this powerful. It was indicative of the sect’s strength as a whole.

The elder looked at Li Qiye and said slowly: “Fellow Daoist Li, my disciple is young and ignorant, how about sparing him and showing our sect some sensibilities?”

He was still ready for battle, not daring to underestimate the enemy. He has heard of Fiercest a long time ago. This was a being capable of murdering Godkings and banishing their sect.

The crowd was moved after hearing this. Ever since Soaring Immortal descended down on the Grand Sea, they have always been imperious. Those who opposed them would be flattened for sure! Alas, this elder had to play nice at this moment.

But then again, it wasn’t shameful at all for him to act in this manner. After all, his enemy was the notorious Fiercest who has never been afraid of anyone ever since his debut. The name Soaring Immortal couldn’t scare him.

Li Qiye looked at him and chuckled: “Show some sensibilities? Not for your Soaring Immortal Sect!”

The elder’s expression soured after hearing this. Even imperial lineages would show their sect some respect but not Li Qiye at this moment. The elder found it difficult to remain calm.

“Fellow Daoist Li, the grand dao is long, you will always see others again.” The elder took a deep breath and said slowly: “It’s better to make a friend than an enemy. Our sect isn’t that easily bullied!”

“So what? Does everyone need to give you some face just because you had five emperors?” Li Qiye still didn’t respond but a sneer came from the distance.

A youth arrived with a golden luster emanating from his body. He had golden scales all over his body with two green dragon horns. A stormy tsunami accompanied him.

“Hai Lin!” One of the spectators recognized him and became startled.

Even those who haven’t seen him in the past knew who he was: “The young leader of the sea demons!”

The elder uttered coldly: “So you are hiding here but not for long, our young lord will kill you soon enough.”

“I know Long Aotian and his hounds are looking for me.” The youth named Hai Lin snorted: “They won’t find shit on their trip to the sea this time.”

The elder scowled: “You can run for now but not forever. He’ll slay all of you.”

“Wait until he becomes emperor before boasting.” Hai Lin retorted.

The youths present were quiet. Everyone had their own thoughts while watching this.

Soaring Immortal took over a large territory after coming to the Grand Sea. This invoked the retaliation from the presiding demons and sea monsters.

The sea monsters weren't a race. They were beasts living in the depth of the sea such as gigantic fish, serpents, and turtles...

# Chapter 1598: Hai Lin

---

Since the olden times, sea monsters have lived in the deep sea. In the beginning, they lacked intelligence but with the passage of time, they began to evolve.

Later on, some demons and sea monsters mated and this expedited the process. They became smarter and built their own home.

Because of this, the sea monsters commonly known in the Grand Sea were the offsprings of demons and the old sea monsters.

However, these offsprings still maintained their unique characteristics even through the long years.

Due to this relationship, many in this region listed sea monsters together with the demon race. However, some sea demons rejected this notion. Thus, sea monsters became its own classification instead of a particular race.

Nevertheless, these two different camps were still very close, sharing both glory and humiliation. Because of this, they gathered forces to fight against the invader, Soaring Immortal.

Hai Lin's ancestor was rumored to be a gigantic dragon sleeping under the sea. Who knows if this was true or not, but he had golden draconic scales since birth along with a pair of green horns.

Perhaps it was due to his noble origin and great bloodline that he was very powerful since youth, capable of tearing apart his enemies.

As he grew older, his cultivation increased by leaps and bounds. As a teenager, he became the undisputed leader of the sea monsters' young generation.

During the invasion, he became a great role model for the soldiers and used his trident to fight against Soaring Immortal. He also challenged Long Aotian but alas, he lost the fight and nearly

died. His seniors had to save him.

Later on, no one could stop Soaring Immortal's momentum so Hai Lin and his allies had to fight and retreat back to the sea. Long Aotian didn't let up and gave chase so it was strange that Hai Lin was here now.

Back to the present, the elder loudly declared: "You are only a loser to my young lord, no need for him to become Immortal Emperor before killing you!"

"Is that so?" Hai Lin laughed: "I don't know whether Aotian can kill me or not but I'm certain of one thing. I'm killing one of his hounds today!"

The crowd was amazed by his boldness. This was an elder from Soaring Immortal. How many people nowadays would dare to call one of them a hound?

The elder became livid and exclaimed: "Hai Lin, cease your presumptuousness! One of us will die today!"

How could the elder endure this humiliation as a revered elder from the great Soaring Immortal Sect? Despite knowing that he was not Hai Lin's match, he still had to fight.

"Perfect, taste my trident!" Hai Lin didn't waste words and pierced straight at the elder.

"Activate!" The elder crazily roared and used his imperial laws. The figure of an Immortal Emperor emerged in the sky like a mountainous shield. There were numerous imperial runes carved on this shield with sonorous hymns.

It can be said that this elder was also a top expert in the contemporary. Many youths felt their knees shaking under the aura of an emperor and were instantly suppressed.

Alas, he was encountering the ferocious Hai Lin today. Hai Lin soared like a dragon in the sky. His trident seemingly turned into a dragon claw and mercilessly scratched the shield.

“Boom!” The shield shattered under this attack and the elder went flying from the impact. Lin Hao was shocked and quickly flew forward to catch his master.

Hai Lin’s power stunned the crowd. They didn’t think he would be so powerful; no wonder why he could survive after fighting against Long Aotian.

“Too bad for you. If you had an imperial weapon, you could struggle for a bit longer.” Hai Lin pointed his trident at the elder and uttered coldly.

Hai Lin might not be as powerful as Long Aotian but few could be his rivals among the young generation. Moreover, his pure and prestigious bloodline gave him a battle advantage over people at the same cultivation level. Lastly, the trident in his hand was a mighty ancient artifact.

Despite being from the depth of the sea as well, he didn’t come from the ancient heritage like Wolong Xuan. Nevertheless, his bloodline was still very exceptional.

“Do as you please.” The elder had a strong backbone and didn’t bother trying to escape.

“Very well, I’ll take your dog head today as revenge for my people.” Hai Lin aimed his trident at the elder with a cold glint in his eyes.

“Young Noble Hai, please show mercy.” A group dashed over with an old man leading the charge and shouting from the distance.

“Clan Master Yu is here.” A spectator recognized the old man.

After arriving, the old man hurriedly spoke: “Young Noble Hai, Discover is a city of peace, don’t bring the conflict here.”

This was the current clan master of the Yu. In a short time, all eyes were on Hai Lin. Though the Clan Master wasn’t a top expert, he had a wide network of connections in the Grand Sea. Because of

his clan's position, he enjoyed a high status in this region.

“Bringing conflict here?” Hai Lin sneered: “Clan master, this is not me ignoring you and your clan but it is my feud with Soaring Immortal. They killed my brothers so I shall kill their disciples. Blood for blood.”

“Young noble, it is better to make peace. How about my clan acting as a mediator today? If you let go of the elder, you can name the condition.” The clan master slowly said.

He didn't wish to see this elder die at Discover. After all, the elder came to congratulate his clan so face would be lost if the elder were to die here.

“Clan master, I didn't see your clan at the battlefield maintaining justice and speak up for us when Soaring Immortal took over our territory.” Hai Lin spoke coldly: “But now, you're speaking up for Soaring Immortal?”

The clan master's expression became awkward. All he could say was: “The battlefield is one thing but this is Discover, you can't conflate the two.”

“I'm afraid I can't obey. His head is mine today.” Hai Lin chose against showing the clan master some sensibilities and said coldly.

The clan master was put in a difficult dilemma. It was either to fight Hai Lin to save the elder or just to watch the guy die.

“Spare this elder and your race shall have the same treatment at Discover.” A stern and mighty voice came about as a newcomer appeared before the clan master.

He continued on: “No one shall touch your tribe members as long as they're in Discover, not even by the Soaring Immortal Sect!”

“Father.” The clan master quickly bowed.

This was a middle-aged man who looked much younger than the clan master so the clan master's address came as a surprise.

“Ancestor Yu. One of the Yu’s three Godkings.” Someone recognized this middle-aged man.

The three Godkings consisted of the reclusive Matriarch Yu, this middle-aged man, and his grandfather, the Yu Forefather. However, few have met this forefather.

He was a perennially renowned Grand Godking during Immortal Emperor Ta Kong’s generation. The Yu Clan wasn’t big but it had three Godkings, a force enough to overshadow many imperial lineages. This was another reason why it was so famous at the Grand Sea.

Rumor has it that it used to have five Godkings. Unfortunately, two of them have died or the clan would be even more illustrious in the present.

“Ancestor Yu, are you sure?” Hai Lin’s eyes became serious.

“I stay true to my words.” The ancestor spoke: “As long as my clan is here, your members can rest easy at Discover.”

“So be it, I can also keep my words.” Hai Lin took a deep breath and put away his trident. He stared at the elder and coldly uttered: “It’s your lucky day, dog.”

This was a wise decision. If one day, there was nowhere else for them to run, Discover would become a haven.

Of course, he wasn’t afraid of the ancestor going back on his words. At this particular level, everyone spoke with a certain integrity.

Meanwhile, the elder from Soaring Immortal was livid from being humiliated by a youth in this manner.

# Chapter 1599: Skyfire Warship

---

The atmosphere was oppressive. An elder from Soaring Immortal was being threatened by a junior in this manner in this humiliating ordeal.

At the same time, the youths here were shocked at Lin Hai's domineering attitude. Despite losing to Long Aotian before, he was still provoking Soaring Immortal. Not too many would choose this course of action.

He didn't stay long. The guy turned to leave but he paused and bowed his head towards Li Qiye standing on the twelve scales: "Brother Li, this little brother has heard of your reputation long ago. I am a big fan but unfortunately, I have other matters to attend to and can't have a drink with you. I shall ask again in the future given the chance!"

Li Qiye simply smiled and nodded.

Seeing the two acknowledging each other left the crowd with admiration. One was a monster while the other was the Fiercest. No wonder why they would like each other.

People heaved a sigh of relief after Hai Lin left. Ancestor Yu told the elder from Soaring Immortal: "Elder, my apology for being an inadequate host. Please come to our humble abode."

"I agree." The elder hurriedly said. The purpose of his trip was to congratulate Matriarch Yu.

"Wait until my business is finished before leaving." Li Qiye lazily said as the two were about to leave.

The elder was aghast while Ancestor Yu's expression soured. The elder was completely livid for suffering this humiliation today in the hands of Hai Lin and Li Qiye. However, he could only keep it in since there was nothing he could do.

Fiercest was even more ruthless and powerful than Hai Lin.

Anyone had to play the nice child in front of him.

Ancestor Yu frowned and slowly said: “Young Noble Li, no need to add to the fire. If the disciples from Soaring Immortal have offended you, you are the bigger man, why not...”

He was also shocked by Li Qiye’s ability to reach the peak. He had heard of the guy’s fame long ago but didn’t wish to see anything happen to the master-disciple duo at Discover.

“No need for your clan to stick its nose in.” Li Qiye interrupted him with a hand wave and said: “Return from whence you came, you’re not qualified to mediate my issues.”

Ancestor Yu’s expression turned ugly as well. Though he was only a Grand Godking, he was still an influential figure in Mortal Emperor. Moreover, with his clan’s prestige, he was qualified to interfere with worldly feuds. But now, Li Qiye had shown him complete disdain in public; this has become quite unbearable.

The elder from Soaring Immortal coldly responded: “Li Qiye, our Soaring Immortal Sect isn’t to be bullied. We’re not afraid of trouble...”

“I know.” Li Qiye interrupted him too and chuckled: “No need to talk about how strong your sect is, I’m well aware and still doesn’t give a damn. However, I’m a reasonable person too. This issue has nothing to do with you. It’s your disciple who is trying to besmirch my reputation. I won’t make it difficult for you, hand him over and you can leave!”

Lin Hao turned pale after hearing this. If his master were to really hand him over to Fiercest, death was the most likely outcome.

“That’s impossible!” The elder immediately refused: “I will not watch a disciple of my sect being harmed by others!”

He was a protective person and would never hand his disciple over to an enemy since he was aware of the fatal outcome as well.

“If that’s the case, I’ll take care of you too.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled and said.

“Come then, I’ll take you on!” The stubborn old man was unyielding. He knew he was no match for Fiercest but still chose to protect his disciple instead of just watching on the sideline.

“Courageous enough, not a disgrace to the Soaring Immortal Sect.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

Ancestor Yu stepped out to join the conversation: “Young Noble Li, how about dropping this matter? Discover is willing to welcome both sides...”

“Too much nonsense. Run back to your clan!” Li Qiye said dismissively and spread out his palm at the ancestor.

The ancestor wasn’t happy at this disrespectful gesture before the crowd. He roared and with a loud bang, a light emanated from his body and made it seem gigantic. The aura of a Grand Godking engulfed the entire city, almost causing it to blow up.

“I’ll have a taste of your peerless art then, Young Noble Li!” He couldn’t bear this humiliation so he decided to go all out.

“Boom!” A long and melodious note resounded. Dao runes floated around Li Qiye’s palm. Next, a gigantic palm that resembled Li Qiye’s own emerged. It was made from thick and divine laws. This was the palm of a true god containing the power of their sacred race.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A string of dao melodies came urgently as if the player was pulling the zither string with great speed.

“Boom!” Ancestor Yu’s incredible attack instantly faltered before the true god’s palm. He staggered several steps backward from the impact.

“The power of the twelve scales!” Ancestor Yu was astonished. He knew about the scales more than outsiders. Even their clan couldn’t control its power so this came as a huge surprise.

“Scram!” Li Qiye didn’t bother glancing at the ancestor. He swept his sleeve and a storm came about, nearly pushing the entire city up to the sky.

The ancestor and the children from the Yu Clan were helpless and instantly swept flying back to their clan. When they finally calmed down, all were pale.

Even the elder from Soaring Immortal was shocked as well.

“Rumble!” At this time, the sky suddenly turned dark. Gigantic ships spanning for a hundred meter emerged like monsters.

These ships were made from pure gold and beautifully decorated with red lacquer. The diagrams carved on the surface made the ships look blazing. There were a total of eight ships with cannons on the left and right hulls.

“Skyfire Warships!” People who were aware of these ships’ battle potential cried out.

“Fire!” The elder was ecstatic and gave the command.

Their ships were here to celebrate Matriarch Yu’s exit from meditation. They were also meant to showcase their sect’s power but now, this force was being used on Li Qiye.

“Whoosh!” The refined jades engraved on the ship lit up. A majestic worldly energy instantly ignited the sunfire inside the cannons.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Several hundred cannons on the eight ships unleashed the sunfire shots like raging dragons towards Li Qiye on the twelve scales.

The Skyfire Warships were Soaring Immortal’s tools of war. The earliest version was created by Immortal Emperor Tun Ri. Later on, the sect created another batch using his original blueprint.

These were the preeminent weapons used by them to occupy the territories in the Grand Sea. Their power was not to be

underestimated, evident by numerous past exploits.

“Boom!” The entire city quaked before the incoming barrage. The refined jades served as the catalyst while the sunfire became the shots. They could render enemies into ashes instantly.

The spectators were astounded to see the raging fiery shots and understood how Soaring Immortal could push back so many demons in such a short time. Not too many great powers could withstand this first round of bombing. Discover seemed to be under a great crisis.

“Bang!” When all the shots struck the twelve scales, smoke filled the entire area so no one could see what was going on inside.

# Chapter 1600: The Twelve Scales Power

---

When the smoke dispersed, they saw Li Qiye standing there safe and sound. An iron barrier floated above his head with a flowing, metallic shimmer.

It wasn't his own power since it came from the twelve scales. They lit up with flowing colors that eventually turned into this barrier enveloping Li Qiye entirely and stopped the barrage from the eight warships.

The elder was completely caught off guard to see Li Qiye not suffering the slightest damage. The experts on the ships became alarmed and suddenly had an ominous feeling. The elder had the urge to run away. In the beginning, he hoped that the ships could do something. Even if they couldn't kill Li Qiye, subduing him was still fine. Alas, they were completely useless.

Li Qiye glanced at the eight warships and chuckled: "Skyfire Warships from Immortal Emperor Tun Ri. You shouldn't use them on me."

Having said that, he reached forward and more musical notes of a rapid temperament came about. They echoed across Discover as each individual step was playing their own note as if composing a supreme symphony.

"Clang!" All twelve steps lit up. In a split second, a terrible flame crazily surged like the eruptions of countless volcanoes into the world.

"Boom!" Even Discover vibrated with the scales.

Many figures emerged on each step, large enough to blot out the sky. Everyone looked up in admiration at their sight. They wore the heaven due to their monstrous size and trampled on the earth.

Endless brilliance oozed out of their very being and turned into fire. Even the sun paled in comparison. The scary part was the holy

and eternal auras emanating from the figures, indicative of their might.

“Are they gods?” A sense of fear rose among the experts here. No other races had this type of divinity. It was completely different from an Immortal Emperor’s aura and seemed to be innate since birth.

Its holiness instilled a primal fear. This was a race above all other races with the greatest of bloodlines. No one knew what these huge figures represented but a sense of dread and doom permeated.

“Kill.” Li Qiye gave a flat order. This, in turn, heralded a series of explosions.

The giant figures reached forward and grabbed all eight warships instantly. When they closed their palms, the world seemed to be sealed and there was nowhere to run. The troops could only sit there, awaiting death.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The caught ships continued to fire at the palms but even their strongest onslaught couldn’t pierce through at all.

“Crack!” When the palms began to close, the ships were torn asunder.

“Ah!” Miserable screams resounded. The disciples on the ship wanted to escape but the palms have sealed the area so they were crushed along with the ships.

“Li Qiye, stop!” The elder shouted and soared into the sky with Lin Hao in order to stop him. Even though they knew it was futile, they must exert their meager strength for the sake of the sect.

“Boom!” The moment they got up in the air, they were immediately slammed back down to the ground. A sonorous note then suppressed the two instantly.

“Crack!” Finally, it was over for the eight warships. They turned into eight large iron knots with beautiful colors. Outside of the

paint, there was also the color of blood.

“Bang!” The eight iron rubbles fell into the ground and created huge pits. Not one disciple was able to escape to the dismay of the elder sitting down there.

He couldn't stay calm at all. This scene was too much of a blow; it destroyed his mind completely.

For millions of years now, their sect has been invincible and glorious, capable of calling for rains and winds. In their eyes, as long as their sect came out, it would be invincible.

After arriving at the Grand Sea, they were able to take over one sea region despite some opposition. It wasn't a problem with their strength.

Alas, their eight warships have been rendered into scraps by Li Qiye. At the same time, he also crushed their prestige. They have never been utterly defeated and humiliated like this.

The elder simply sat there while feeling his strength leaving him. He had no words to describe his feelings when facing Fiercest.

“Pluff!” Li Qiye attacked again with a soundwave from the twelve scales by gesturing with his finger. Lin Hao was instantly turned into a bloody mist without a chance to scream.

As for his master, the elder sat there in a daze. He was powerless to resist and struggling was futile. He finally felt true despair before Fiercest, unable to stop a single thing.

“I'm sparing your life so that you can send a message to your sect. I don't care who the leader is right now, immediately scram from my sight or I'll destroy your sect sooner or later!” Li Qiye coldly glared at the elder.

In the past, the shocked elder would still make some stubborn retorts regardless of how powerful the enemy may be. After all, Soaring Immortal has never been afraid of anyone. But now, he couldn't utter a single comment. Just like that, he finally crawled

up and left quietly. He seemed to have grown dozens of years older.

Li Qiye then stared coldly at everyone while being on top of the twelve scales with deity-like existences surrounding him. He was a supreme god, reigning above all else. Everyone present became afraid and lowered their head in order to avoid his gaze.

He simply smiled and turned towards the Yu mansion before sighing quietly. Next, the light on the twelve scales disappeared. The place regained its original form as he started walking down one step at a time.

People quickly made a path for him. From beginning to end, not one person dared to look at him directly.

After coming out, he told the monarch: “Come, it’s time to visit the Yu Clan.”

Having said that, he started walking away. The monarch’s wits returned and hurriedly followed him.

Inside the mansion, Ancestor Yu and the others were aghast. The entire mansion was quiet and confused. Even a Grand Godking like Ancestor Yu felt a cold chill. Li Qiye’s strength was one thing but the matter that scared him the most was the guy’s ability to control the twelve scales. This was because he knew that the twelve scales weren’t only a place for examination. It was also a very important weapon for his clan.

# Table of Contents

## [Emperor's Domination](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1501: Breaking The Formation](#)

[Chapter 1502: Blood Drawing](#)

[Chapter 1503: Seizing The Reincarnation Nine-Leaves](#)

[Chapter 1504: Imperial Dualchild](#)

[Chapter 1505: A Shocking Battle](#)

[Chapter 1506: The Difficult Past](#)

[Chapter 1507: Ling Fengyun](#)

[Chapter 1508: Legendary Godking](#)

[Chapter 1509: Legend](#)

[Chapter 1510: Stygian Monarch](#)

[Chapter 1511: The Dream Empyrean](#)

[Chapter 1512: Mobilization](#)

[Chapter 1513: I Am One And Only Across The Ages](#)

[Chapter 1514: Tumultuous Change](#)

[Chapter 1515: Ling Fengyun's Proposition](#)

[Chapter 1516: Negotiation](#)

[Chapter 1517: One Move](#)

[Chapter 1518: Dao Decapitation](#)

[Chapter 1519: One Strike Jolting The Nine Heavens](#)

[Chapter 1520: The Battle Begins](#)

[Chapter 1521: Unbeatable](#)

[Chapter 1522: Ling Fengyuns Power](#)

[Chapter 1523: Escape](#)

[Chapter 1524: Ancestral Terra](#)

[Chapter 1525: Ling Fengyuns Surrender](#)

[Chapter 1526: More Heavenly Annihilations](#)

[Chapter 1527: Against The Ancestral Trees](#)

[Chapter 1528: Invincible Battle](#)

[Chapter 1529: Ancestral Mark](#)

[Chapter 1530: The Tree That Shoulders The Heaven](#)

[Chapter 1531: Invincible Tree](#)

[Chapter 1532: Time To End](#)

[Chapter 1533: Destroying The Ancestral Terra](#)  
[Chapter 1534: All Races Trembled](#)  
[Chapter 1535: See You Again, Young Master](#)  
[Chapter 1536: Seven Martial Pavilion](#)  
[Chapter 1537: Current Situation](#)  
[Chapter 1538: Shadow Council](#)  
[Chapter 1539: An Ambitious Strategy](#)  
[Chapter 1540: A World Savior Has Never Existed](#)  
[Chapter 1541: Time of Departure](#)  
[Chapter 1542: Shadowless](#)  
[Chapter 1543: Entering The Northern Grand Sea](#)  
[Chapter 1544: Mother And Daughter](#)  
[Chapter 1545: A Daughter Out Of Nowhere](#)  
[Chapter 1546: Wenren Clan](#)  
[Chapter 1547: Wenren Lurui](#)  
[Chapter 1548: Lurui's Husband](#)  
[Chapter 1549: Marriage Trouble](#)  
[Chapter 1550: The Wenren Clans Plan](#)  
[Chapter 1551: Forced To Be A Scapegoat?](#)  
[Chapter 1552: Wenren Jianshi's Thoughts](#)  
[Chapter 1553: Dongfang Clan](#)  
[Chapter 1554: Further Complication](#)  
[Chapter 1555: Hai Yangying's Scheme](#)  
[Chapter 1556: Pleading](#)  
[Chapter 1557: Dejection](#)  
[Chapter 1558: Field Of Dragon War](#)  
[Chapter 1559: Sky Dragon King](#)  
[Chapter 1560: A Beauty Brewing Tea](#)  
[Chapter 1561: Conferment](#)  
[Chapter 1562: Trouble Approaches](#)  
[Chapter 1563: Netherlord Hexagear Launcher](#)  
[Chapter 1564: Goodbye Kiss](#)  
[Chapter 1565: Little Sea Village](#)  
[Chapter 1566: Taking The Treasure From The Temple](#)  
[Chapter 1567: Approaching Storm](#)  
[Chapter 1568: Pearl City](#)  
[Chapter 1569: Small Courtyard](#)  
[Chapter 1570: Allheaven Grotto](#)  
[Chapter 1571: Peacock Bright Monarch](#)

[Chapter 1572: Mysterious Island](#)  
[Chapter 1573: Identity Verification](#)  
[Chapter 1574: Three Branches Of Heaven Suppression](#)  
[Chapter 1575: Internal Strife At Heaven Suppression](#)  
[Chapter 1576: Yu Zhan](#)  
[Chapter 1577: Scared Stiff](#)  
[Chapter 1578: Messenger From Heaven Suppression](#)  
[Chapter 1579: Threat](#)  
[Chapter 1580: Discover City](#)  
[Chapter 1581: Small Pub](#)  
[Chapter 1582: Shopkeeper](#)  
[Chapter 1583: Tumultuous Years](#)  
[Chapter 1584: Memories](#)  
[Chapter 1585: Lonely Grand Dao](#)  
[Chapter 1586: The Three Levels At The Top](#)  
[Chapter 1587: Invincible Grand Dao](#)  
[Chapter 1588: Beat Of The Grand Dao](#)  
[Chapter 1589: Requirements To Become An Emperor](#)  
[Chapter 1590: The Twelve Scales](#)  
[Chapter 1591: Yu Yulian](#)  
[Chapter 1592: Soaring Immortal Successor](#)  
[Chapter 1593: Fierces Notoriety](#)  
[Chapter 1594: I Have Thirteen Palaces](#)  
[Chapter 1595: Climbing The Scales](#)  
[Chapter 1596: To The Top](#)  
[Chapter 1597: Storm](#)  
[Chapter 1598: Hai Lin](#)  
[Chapter 1599: Skyfire Warship](#)  
[Chapter 1600: The Twelve Scales Power](#)